This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

1817
ARTES VERITAS SCIENTIA
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
TUEBOR
SI QUAERIS PENINSULAM AMOENAM
CIRCUMSPICE
niston

DON QUIXOTE.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH OF

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

VOL. IV.

Vol. I. page 191.

EXETER:
J. & B. WILLIAMS.
1827.

868
C42d
tJ38
1828
v.4

THE

LIFE AND EXPLOITS

OF

DON QUIXOTE

DE LA MANCHA.

TRANSLATED FROM THE ORIGINAL SPANISH

OF

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA,

BY

CHARLES JARVIS, ESQ

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. IV.

EXETER:

J. & B. WILLIAMS.

1822.

CONTENTS.

BOOK THE THIRD.

CHAP. I.

Of the relishing conversation which passed betwee the duchess, her damsels, and Sancho Panza Page

CHAP. II.

Giving an account of the method prescribed for disen chanting the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso; which i one of the most famous adventures of this book 1

CHAP. III.

Wherein is continued the account of the method pre scribed to Don Quixote for the disenchanting o Dulcinea, with other wonderful events . . . 2

CHAP. IV.

Wherein is related the strange and never-imagine adventure of the afflicted matron, alias the countes of Trifaldi; with a letter written by Sancho Panz to his wife Teresa Panza 3

CHAP. V.

In which is continued the famous adventure of the af flicted matron's misfortune 3

CHAP. VI.

In which an account is given of the afflicted matron' misfortune 3

CHAP. VII.

Wherein *Trifaldi* continues her stupendous and me *orable history* . . . . . .

CHAP. VIII.

Of matters relating and appertaining to this adventure, and to this memorable history 48

CHAP. IX.

Of the arrival o[illegible] the conclusion of this prolix advent[illegible] 53

C

Of the instructions Don [illegible] gave Sancho Panza before he went to govern the island; with other matters well considered 64

CHAP. XI.

Of the second instructions Don Quixote gave Sancho Panza 69

CHAP. XII.

How Sancho Panza was carried to his government, and of the strange adventure which befel Don Quixote in the castle 76

CHAP. XIII.

How the great Sancho Panza took possession of his island and of the manner of his beginning to govern it 85

CHAP. XIV.

Of the dreadful bell-ringing and cattish consternation Don Quixote was put into in the progress of the enamoured Altisidora's amour 92

CHAP. XV. m n

Giving a further account of Sancho's behaviour in his government. . . . . .

CHAP. XVI.

fel Don Quixote with Donna Rodrigues the
ı duenna; together with other accidents
o be written, and had in eternal remem-
. 105

CHAP. XVII.

fel Sancho Panza as he was going the round
and 113

CHAP. XVIII.

ı declared who were the enchanters and ex-
rs that whipped the duenna, and pinched and
ı Don Quixote; with the success of the
o carried the letter to Teresa Panza, San-
e 124

CHAP. XIX.

ogress of Sancho Panza's government, with
:ertaining events 133

CHAP. XX.

is related the adventure of the second af-
· distressed matron, otherwise called Don
iguez 141

BOOK THE FOURTH.

CHAP. I.

some end and conclusion of Sancho Panza's
nt 149

CHAP. II.

of matters relating to this history, an
. . . . . .

CHAP. III.

Of what befel Sancho in the way, and other matters which you have only to see 162

CHAP. IV.

Of the prodigious and never-seen battle between Don Quixote de la [illegible] cquey Tosilos, in defence of the d[illegible] riguez's daughter 169

Which relates how Do[illegible] took his leave of the duke, and of what be[illegible] h the witty and wanton Altisidora, one [illegible] duchess's waiting-women 174

CHAP. VI.

Shewing how adventures crowded so fast upon Don Quixote, they trod upon one another's heels . 179

CHAP. VII.

Wherein is related an extraordinary accident which befel Don Quixote, and which may pass for an adventure 190

CHAP. VIII.

Of what befel Don Quixote in his way to Barcelona 197

CHAP. IX.

Of what befel Don Quixote at his entrance into Barcelona, with other events more true than ingenious 209

CHAP. X.

Which treats of the adventure of the enchanted head, *with other trifles* that must not be omitted . 212

CHAP. XI.

Of the unlucky accident which befel Sancho Panza in *visiting the gallies*, and the strange adventure of the *beautiful Morisca* . . . . . [illegible]

CHAP. XII.

e adventure which gave Don Quixote
r than any which had hitherto befallen
. 233

CHAP. XIII.

account is given who the knight of the
was; with the liberty of Don Gregorio,
cidents 237

CHAP. XIV.

atters, which he, who reads, will see and
rs them read, will hear 242

CHAP. XV.

ion Don Quixote took to turn shepherd,
rural life, till the year of his promise
spired; with other accidents truly pleas-
d 247

CHAP. XVI.

ed adventure which befel Don Quix-
. 253

CHAP. XVII.

t and strangest adventure of all that be-
ixote in the whole course of this grand
. 258

CHAP. XVIII.

vs the seventeenth, and treats of matters
ly necessary to the perspicuity of this
. 263

CHAP. XIX.

Don Quixote with his squire Sancho, in
his village 270

CHAP. XX.

uixote and Sancho arrived at their vil-
. 276

How Don Quixote fell sick, made his will, and d

DON QUIXOTE

DE LA MANCHA.

PART II.——BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

Of the relishing conversation, which passed l the duchess, her damsels, and Sancho Panza thy to be read and remarked.

THE history then relates, that Sancho Pa not sleep that afternoon, but, to keep his wor with the meat in his mouth to see the duches being delighted to hear him talk, made him sit her on a low stool, though Sancho out of pu manners would have declined it: but the would have him sit down as a governor, and t squire, since in both those capacities he deser very stool of the champion Cid Ruy Dias. shrugged up his shoulders, obeyed, and sat dov all the duchess's damsels and duennas got rour him, in profound silence, to hear what he wo But the duchess spoke first, saying: Now we a and that nobody hears us, I would willingly l fied by Signor governor, as to some doubts I h ing from the printed history of the great Don Q one of which is, that since honest Sancho ne Dulcinea, I mean the lady Dulcinea del Tob carried her Don Quixote's letter, it being le pocket-book *in the sable* mountain, how dur the *answer, and the* story of his finding her w *heat, it being all* a sham, and a lie, and

the prejudice of the good character of the peerless Dulcinea, and the whole so unbecoming the quality and fidelity of a tr sty squire?

At these wo ds, without making any reply, Sancho got up from h.s stool, and stepping softly, with his body bent, and l is finger on his lips, he crept round the room, lifting u p the hangings; and this being done, he presently sat h.imself down again and said: Now, madam, that I am company hears us, I will answer, tion, to all you have asked, and to e; and the first thing I tell you, is, t er Don Quixote for a downright ma etimes he comes out with things, whi g, and in the opinion of all that hear him, are so discreet, and so well put together, that Satan himself could not speak better; and yet for all that, in good truth, and without any doubt, I am firmly persuaded he is mad. Now, having settled this in my mind, I dare undertake to make him believe any thing that has neither head nor tail, like the business of the answer to the letter, and another affair of some six or eight days standing, which is not yet in print: I mean the enchantment of my mistress Donna Dulcinea; for you must know I made him believe she was enchanted, though there is no more truth in it than in a story of a cock and a bull.* The duchess desired him to tell her the particulars of that enchantment or jest; and Sancho recounted the whole, exactly as it had passed; at which the hearers were not a little pleased, and the duchess, proceeding in her discourse, said: From what honest Sancho has told me, a certain scruple has started into my head, and something whispers me in the ear, saying to me: Since Don Quixote de la Mancha is a fool, an idiot, and a madman, and Sancho Panza his squire knows it, and yet serves and follows him, and relies on his vain promis-

* The original is, "no siendo, mas verdad que por *los cerros de Ubeda*;" which cannot be rendered in *any intelligible sense* in English, nor do the dictionaries afford us any tolerable explanation of the phrase "*por los cerros de Ubeda*, *i. e.* by the hills of Ubeda. Perhaps there might be some old ballad, romance, or beginning with those words.

, without doubt, he must be more mad, and more
spid than his master; and, this being really the case,
will turn to bad account, lady duchess, if to such a
ancho Panza you give an island to govern; for he
ho knows not how to govern himself, how should he
now how to govern others? By my faith, madam,
oth Sancho, this same scruple comes in the nick of
me · please your ladyship to bid it speak out plain, or
it lists: for I know it says true, and, had I been
ise, I should have left my master long ere now; but
ch was my lot, and such my evil-errantry. I can do
o more; follow him I must; we are both of the same
own; I have eaten his bread; I love him; he returns
y kindness; he gave me his ass-colts; and above all
am faithful; and therefore it is impossible any thing
hould part us but the sexton's spade and shovel: and,
'your highness has no mind the government you pro-
nised should be given me, God made me of less, and it
ay be the not giving it me may redound to the bene-
t of my conscience: for, as great a fool as I am, I un-
erstand the proverb, The pismire had wings to her
art; and it may perhaps be easier for Sancho the
quire to get to heaven, than for Sancho the governor.
They make as good bread here as in France; and, In
he dark all cats are grey; and, Unhappy is he, who
as not breakfasted at three; and, No stomach is a
pan bigger than another, and may be filled as they
ay, with straw or with hay; and, Of the little birds in
he air, God himself takes the care; and, Four yards
f coarse cloth of Cuenca are warmer than as many of
ne Segovia serge; and, at our leaving this world, and
oing into the next, the prince travels in as narrow a
ath as the day labourer; and the pope's body takes up
o more room than the sexton's, though the one be
igher than the other; for when we come to the grave,
e must all shrink and lie close, or be made to shrink
nd lie close in spite of us; and so good night: and
herefore I say again, that, if your ladyship will not
ive me *the island, because* I am a fool, I will be so
ise as not to care a fig for it; and I have heard say
e devil lurks behind the cross; and, All is not gol
f glitters; and Bamba the husbandman was tak
among his ploughs, his yokes, and oxen to be k
ain; and Roderigo was taken from his broca

pastimes, and riches, to be devoured by snakes, if ancient ballads do not lie. How should they lie? said then the duenna Rodriguez, who was one of the auditors; for there is a ballad which tells us how king Roderigo was shut up alive in a tomb full of toads, snakes, and lizards, and that, two days after, the king said from within the tomb, with a mournful and low voice, Now they gnaw me, now t[illegible] in the part by which I sinned most: and a[illegible] this, the gentleman has a great deal of reas[illegible] he would rather be a peasant than a king, if s[illegible] must eat him up.

The duchess could n[illegible] laughing to hear the simplicity of her duenn[illegible] admiring to hear the reasonings and proverbs of Sancho, to whom she said: Honest Sancho knows full well, that, whatever a knight once promises, he endeavours to perform it, though it cost him his life. The duke, my lord and husband, though he is not of the errant order, is nevertheless a knight, and therefore will make good his word as to the promised island, in spite of the envy and the wickedness of the world. Let Sancho be of good cheer; for when he least thinks of it he shall find himself seated in the chair of state of his island and of his territory, and shall so handle his government as to despise for it one of brocade three story high. What I charge him is, to take heed how he governs his vassals, remembering that they are all loyal and well born. As to governing them well, answered Sancho, there is no need of giving it me in charge; for I am naturally charitable and compassionate to the poor, and, None will dare the loaf to steal from him that sifts and kneads the meal; and, by my beads, they shall put no false dice upon me: I am an old dog, and understand *tus, tus,** and know how to snuff my eyes in proper time, and will not suffer cobwebs to get into my eyes; for I know where the shoe pinches. All this I say, that the good may be sure to have of me both heart and hand, and the bad neither *foot nor footing*: and, in my opinion, as to the busi[illegible] *of governing, the whole lies in the beginning; perhaps, when I have been fifteen days a governo*[illegible]

* *Words used in Spain to coax a dog to come, w[illegible] a design is to beat him.*

may itch after the office, and I may know more
ıan of the labour of the field, to which I was
You are in the right, Sancho, quoth the duch-
nobody is born learned, and bishops are made
, and not of stones. But, to resume the dis-
re were just now upon, concerning the en-
ent of the lady Dulcinea; I am very certain,
ıcho's design of putting a trick upon his mas-
making him believe that the country wench
lcinea, and that, if his master did not know
nust proceed from her being enchanted, was all
vance of some one or other of the enchanters
vecute Don Quixote: for really, and in truth,
from good hands, that the wench who jumped
s ass was, and is Dulcinea del Toboso, and that
Sancho, in thinking he was the deceiver, was
deceived; and there is no more doubt of this
an of things we never saw: for Signor Sancho
nust know that here also we have our enchant-
ı love us, and tell us plainly and sincerely, and
any tricks or devices, all that passes in the
and believe me, Sancho, the jumping wench
is Dulcinea del Toboso, who is enchanted just
ı as the mother that bore her; and, when we
ink of it, we shall see her in her own proper
ınd then Sancho will be convinced of the mis-
now lives in.
ıis may very well be, quoth Sancho Panza, and
egin to believe what my master told of Monte-
ave, where he pretends he saw the lady Dulci-
Toboso in the very same dress and garb I said I
ın her in, when I enchanted her for my own
e alone; whereas, as your ladyship says, all this
ıve been quite otherwise: for it cannot, and
t be presumed, that my poor invention should
nstant, start so cunning a device, nor do I be-
y master is such a madman, as to credit so ex-
ıt a thing, upon no better a voucher than myself.
adam, your goodness ought not, therefore, to
ın me as an ill-designed person; for a dunce,
ı, is not obliged to penetrate into the thoughts
lty intentions of wicked enchanters. I invented
y to escape the chidings of my master, and not
ge to offend him: and, if it has fallen ou

...ch, whom Sancho saw coming o
out doubt it is Dulcinea, and that th
abouts are very busy, and excessivel
say, quoth Sancho Panza, if my lady
boso is enchanted, so much the wo
do not think myself bound to engage
enemies, who must needs be many ar
it is, that she I saw was a country-w
took her, and such I judged her to be
Dulcinea, it is not to be placed to
ought it to lie at my door. It would
I must be called in question at every
cho said it, Sancho did it, Sancho
Sancho returned; as if Sancho were
and not that very Sancho Panza, hand
all the world over, as Sampson Carras
is at least a candidate to be a bachelo
and such persons cannot lie, excepting
a mind to it, or when it turns to good
there is no reason why any body shoul
since I have a good name; and, as I

' florentibus occidit annis :" in short, to speak in his
wn way, A bad cloak often covers a good drinker.
Truly, madam, answered Sancho, I never in my life
trank for any bad purpose : for thirst it may be I have;
or I am no hypocrite : I drink when I have a mind,
nd when I have no mind, and when it is given me,
ot to be thought shy or ill-bred ; for, when a friend
drinks to one, who can be so hard-hearted as not to
dledge him ? But though I put on the shoes, I do not
lirty them. Besides, the squires of knights-errant
ost commonly drink water ; for they are always wan-
lering about woods, forests, meadows, mountains, and
raggy rocks, without meeting the poorest pittance of
vine, though they would give an eye for it. I believe
o too, answered the duchess : but for the present,
Sancho, go and repose yourself, and we will hereafter
alk more at large, and order shall speedily be given
bout easing you, as you call it, in the government.

Sancho again kissed the duchess's hand, and begged
f her, as a favour, that good care might be taken of
his Dapple, for he was the light of his eyes. What
Dapple ? quoth the duchess. My ass, replied Sancho ;
or, to avoid calling him by that name, I commonly
all him Dapple : and I desired this mistress duenna
here, when I first came into the castle, to take care of
him, and she was as angry, as if I had said she was ugly
r old ; though it should be more proper and natural
or duennas* to dress asses than to set off drawing-
ooms. God be my help! how ill a gentleman of our
own agreed with these madams! He was some coun-
ry clown to be sure, quoth Donna Rodriguez ; for,
ad he been a gentleman, and well born, he would
ave placed them above the horns of the moon.
Enough, quoth the duchess ; let us have no more of
his ; peace, Donna Rodriguez, and you, Signor Panza,
e quiet ; and leave the care of making much of your
Dapple to me ; for, he being a jewel of Sancho's, I
ill lay him upon the apple of my eye. It will be suf-
cient for him to lie in the stable, answered Sancho ;

* *They are old waiting-maids, kept, in Spain, partly
state, and partly to have an eye over the young
ids. They are universally odious, being looked
either as bawds or spies.*

for upon the apple of your grandeur's eye, neither he nor I are worthy to lie one single moment, and I would no more consent to it, than I would poniard myself for, though my master says, that, in complaisance we should rather lose the game by a card too much than too little, yet, when the business is asses and eyes, we should go with compass in hand, and keep within measured bounds. Carry him, Sancho, quoth the duchess, to your government, and there you may regale him as you please, and set him free from further labour.* Think not, my lady duchess, you have said much, quoth Sancho; for I have seen more than two asses go to governments, and, if I should carry mine, it would be no such new thing. Sancho's reasoning renewed the duchess's laughter and satisfaction; and dismissing him to his repose, she went to give the duke an account of what had passed between them, and they two agreed to contrive and give orders to have a jest put upon Don Quixote, which should be famous, and consonant to the style of knight-errantry; in which they played him many, so proper, and such ingenious ones, that they are some of the best adventures contained in this grand history.

CHAP. II.

Giving an account of the method prescribed for disenchanting the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, which is one of the most famous adventures of this book.

GREAT was the pleasure the duke and duchess received from the conversation of Don Quixote and Sancho Panza; and, persisting in the design they had of playing them some tricks, which should carry the semblance and face of adventures, they took a hint from [illegible] dy told them of Mon- [illegible] one. But what the [illegible] Sancho should be s[illegible]

[illegible] irty years' service [illegible] tained at his lord'

s to believe for certain, that Dulcinea del
nchanted, he himself having been the en-
mpostor in that business. And so, having
eir servants how they were to behave, six
ey carried Don Quixote a-hunting with a
ers and huntsmen, not inferior to that of
ad. They gave Don Quixote a hunting
icho another, of the finest green cloth:
xote would not put his on, saying, he must
to the severe exercise of arms, and that
carry wardrobes and sumptors about him.
ook what was given him, with design to
it opportunity he should have.
ted day being come, Don Quixote armed
Sancho put on his new suit, and mounted
n he would not quit, though they offered
and so he thrust himself amidst the troop
The duchess issued forth magnificently
Don Quixote, out of pure politeness and
the reins of her palfrey, though the duke
nsent to it. At last they came to a wood,
very high mountains, where posting
n places where the toils were to be pitch-
he company having taken their different
int began with a great hallooing and noise,
t they could not hear one another, as well
the hounds, as the winding of the horns
alighted, and, with a boar-spear in her
er stand in a place where she knew wild
pass. The duke and Don Quixote alight-
placed themselves by her side. Sancho
elf in the rear of them all, without alight-
pple, whom he durst not quit, lest some
hould befal him. And scarcely were they
ranged in order, with several of their
nd them, when they perceived an enor-
ursued by the dogs, and followed by the
king towards them, grinding his teeth
nd tossing foam from his mouth. Don
ing him, braced his shield, and laying his
sword, stepped before the rest to receive
ke did the like, with his javelin in his
he duchess would have advanced before
ke had not prevented her. Only San

considering that, if the furious ani
he should be within his reach, he
loud, and to call for help so viol
heard him, and did not see him, th
between the teeth of some wild b
tusked boar was laid at his length l
many boar-spears levelled at him;
turning his head about at Sancho's
knew him, saw him hanging from
head downward, and close by him l
ed him not in his calamity. And
Engeli says he seldom saw Sanc
Dapple, or Dapple without Sancho;
sty and cordial love maintained be
Quixote went and disengaged Sanch
self freed and upon the ground, fell
in the hunting suit, and it grieved h
he fancied he possessed in that suit
fee-simple.

They laid the mighty boar acros
and, covering it with branches of ros
they carried it, as the spoils of victo
tent, erected in the middle of the v
found the tables ranged in order, a
so sumptuous and grand that it

"May Fabila's sad doom be thine,
And hungry bears upon thee dine."

ıs a Gothic king, quoth Don Quixote, who, go-
hunt wild beasts, was devoured by a bear.
I say, answered Sancho, is, that I would not
rinces and kings run themselves into such dan-
nerely for their pleasure; which methinks ought
be so, since it consists in killing a creature that
t committed any fault. You are mistaken, San-
t is quite otherwise, answered the duke; for
ercise of hunting wild beasts is the most proper
cessary for kings and princes of any whatever.
ng is an image of war: in it there are strata-
artifices, and ambuscades, to overcome your
without hazard to your person: in it you en-
inching cold, and intolerable heat; idleness and
are contemned; natural vigour is corroborated,
e members of the body made active: in short it
xercise, which may be used without prejudice to
ody, and with pleasure to many; and the best
, that it is not for all people, as are all other
y sports, excepting hawking, which is also pecul-
kings and great persons. And therefore, San-
hange your opinion, and, when you are a gov-
exercise yourself in hunting, and you will find
ccount in it. Not so, answered Sancho; the
overnor, and the broken leg, should keep at
It would be fine indeed for people to come fa-
about business, to seek him, while he is in the
ins following his recreations: at that rate the
ment might go to wreck. In good truth, sir,
and pastimes are rather for your idle compan-
han for governors.* What I design to divert
with, shall be playing at brag at Easter,
bowls on Sundays and holidays: as for your
s, they benefit not my condition, nor agree
y conscience. God grant you prove as good as

---

ading, perhaps, to this law of king Alphonso;
ng must not be so addicted to hunting, as to be
le to do the good he ought; or indulge himself
b *in that pastime*, as to hinder his attention to
' *affairs*." *l. 2, tit. 5, part 2.*

you say; but saying and doing are at a wide di
quoth the duke. Be it so, replied Sancho: Tl
pay-master is in pain for no pawn; and, God's
better than rising early; and, The belly carr
legs, and not the legs the belly: I mean, tha
the help of God, and a good intention, I shall
less govern better than a goss-hawk. Ay, ay, le
put their finger in my mouth, and they shall see
er I can bite or no. The curse of God and of
saints light on thee, accursed Sancho, quot
Quixote: when will the day come, as I hav
said, that I shall hear thee utter one current a
herent sentence without proverbs? I beseec
grandeurs, let this blockhead alone: he will gri
souls to death, not between two, but betwe
thousand proverbs, introduced as much to the p
and as well timed, as I wish God may gra
health, or me, if I desire to hear them. Sancho
proverbs, quoth the duchess, though they ex
number those of the Greek commentator,* y
are not to be less valued for the brevity of the
ces. For my own part I must own, they give m
pleasure than any others, though better timed a
ter applied.

With these and the like entertaining discours
left the tent; and went into the wood to visit t
and nets. The day was soon spent, and night c
not so clear nor so calm as the season of th
which was the midst of summer, required, but
of *clair obscur*, which contributed very much
forward the duke and duchess's design. Now
coming on, soon after the twilight, on a sudd
wood seemed on fire from all the four quarte
presently were heard, on all sides, an infinite
of cornets and other instruments of war, as if
body of horse was passing through the wood
blaze of the fire, and the sound of the warlike
ments, almost blinded and stunned the eyes a
of the by-standers, and even of all that were

* "Commentador Griego." Quære, who the
means. Shelton renders it, "although they b
than Malera's."

wood. Presently were heard infinite Lelilies* after the Moorish fashion, when they are just going to join battle. Trumpets and clarions sounded, drums beat, fifes played, almost all at once, so fast and without any intermission, that he must have had no sense, who had not lost it at the confused din of so many instruments. The duke was in astonishment, the duchess in a fright, Don Quixote in amaze, and Sancho Panza in a fit of trembling: in short, even they who were in the secret were terrified, and consternation held them all in silence. A post-boy, habited like a devil, passed before them, winding, instead of a cornet, a monstrous hollow horn, which yielded a hoarse and horrible sound. So ho, brother courier, quoth the duke, who are you? whither go you? and what soldiers are those who seem to be crossing this wood? To which the courier answered in a hoarse and dreadful voice: I am the devil, and am going in quest of Don Quixote de la Mancha: the people you inquire about are six troops of enchanters, who are conducting the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso in a triumphal chariot; she comes enchanted, with the gallant Frenchman Montesinos, to inform Don Quixote how that same lady is to be disenchanted. If you were the devil, as you say, and as your figure denotes you to be, quoth Don Quixote, you would before now have known that same knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, who stands here before you. Before God, and upon my conscience, replied the devil, I did not see him; for my thoughts are distracted about so many things, that I forgot the principal business I came about. Doubtless, quoth Sancho, this devil must needs be a very honest fellow, and a good christian; else he would not have sworn by God and his conscience: now, for my part, I verily believe there are some good folks in hell itself. Then the devil, without alighting, directing his eyes to Don Quixote, said: To you, knight of the lions (and may I see you between their paws,) the unfortunate but valiant knight Montesinos sends me, commanding me to tell you from him to wait for him in the very place I meet you in; for he

* This Moorish *cry* seems to be nothing more than quick *and frequent* repetition of the word "Ali *which signifies* "God."

sure of the truth of what had happened to him
tesinos' cave. While he stood wrapped up
cogitations, the duke said to him: Does your
Signor Don Quixote, design to wait here? W
answered he: here will I wait intrepid and cou
though all hell should come to assault me. I
my part, quoth Sancho, I will no more stay he
another devil, and hear another such horn, than
in Flanders.

Now the night grew darker, and numberle
began to run about the wood, like those dry ex
from the earth, which, glancing along the sky,
our sight as shooting stars. There was hea
wise a dreadful noise, like that caused by the
ous wheels of an ox-wagon, from whose harsh
tinued creaking, it is said, wolves and bears fly
there chance to be any within hearing. To all t
bustion was added another, which augmented th
which was, that it seemed as if there were
gagements, or battles, at the four quarters of th
all at one time: for here sounded the dreadful
artillery; there were discharged infinite vollies
shot; the shouts of the combatants seemed to
at hand; the Moorish Lelilies were heard at a d
In short, the cornets, horns, clarions, trumpets,

.en, all covered with black palls, and a large burning
rch of wax fastened to each horn. At the top of the
agon was fixed an exalted seat, on which sat a vene-
.ble old man, with a beard whiter than snow itself,
d so long that it reached below his girdle. His vest-
ent was a long gown of black buckram: for the wag-
was so illuminated, that one might easily discern
d distinguish whatever was in it. The drivers were
o ugly devils, habited in the same buckram, and of
ch hideous aspect, that Sancho, having once seen
em, shut his eyes close, that he might not see them a
cond time. Now the wagon being come close up to
e place, the venerable sire raised himself from his
lty seat, and, standing upon his feet, with a loud
ice he said: I am the sage Lirgandeo: and the wag-
went forward without his speaking another word.
ler this there passed another wagon in the same
nner, with another old man enthroned; who, mak-
the wagon stop, with a voice as solemn as the oth-
s, said: I am the sage Alquife, the great friend to
gando the unknown; and passed on. Then advanc-
another wagon with the same pace: but he, who
s seated on the throne, was not an old man, like the
o former, but a robust and ill-favoured fellow, who,
en he came near, standing up, as the rest had done,
d with a voice more hoarse and more diabolical:
m Arcalaus the enchanter, mortal enemy of Ama-
de Gaul and all his kindred; and on he went.
ese three wagons halted at a little distance, and the
some jarring noise of their wheels ceased; and pres-
ly was heard another (not noise, but) sound, com-
ed of sweet and regular music; at which Sancho
much rejoiced, and took it for a good sign; and
refore he said to the duchess, from whom he had
stirred an inch: Where there is music, madam,
re can be no harm. Nor where there are lights and
ghtness, answered the duchess. To which Sancho
ied: The fire may give light, and bonfires may be
ht, as we see by those that surround us, and yet
may very easily be burnt by them: but music is al-
s a sign of feasting and merriment. That we shall
presently, quoth Don Quixote, who listened to all
was said; *and he said right*, as is shewn in the fol-
ing chapter.

ney call triumphal, drawn by six grey mules
with white linen; and mounted upon each
came a penitent of the light,* clothed also
and a great wax torch lighted in his hand.
was thrice as big as any of the former, and
and top were occupied by twelve other pe
white as snow, and all carrying lighted t
light, which at once caused admiration and
Upon an elevated throne sat a nymph, clad
and veils of silver tissue, bespangled with n
eaves of gold tinsel; which made her appe
very rich, yet very gorgeous. Her face wa
with a transparent delicate tiffany; so that
any impediment from its threads or plaits, y
discover through it the face of a very beautif
and the multitude of lights gave an opportun
inguishing her beauty, and her age, which s
o reach twenty years, nor to be under a
Close by her sat a figure, arrayed in a gown
hey call robes of state, down to the feet, an
covered with a black veil. The moment the
up, just over against where the duke and du
Don Quixote stood, the music of the waits c
presently after that of the harps and lutes, w
d in the car; and the figure in the gown st

off his face, discovered plainly the very figure and ske
eton of Death, so ugly that Don Quixote was startle
and Sancho affrighted at it, and the duke and duche
made a shew of some timorous concern. This livi
Death, raised and standing up, with a voice somewh
drowsy, and a tongue not quite awake, began in t
following manner:—

Merlin I am, miscall'd the devil's son
In lying annals, authoris'd by time;
Monarch supreme and great depositary
Of magic art and Zoroastric skill;
Rival of envious ages, that would hide
The glorious deeds of errant cavaliers,
Favour'd by me, and my peculiar charge.
Though vile enchanters, still on mischief bent,
To plague mankind their baleful art employ,
Merlin's soft nature, ever prone to good,
His power inclines to bless the human race.

In hell's dark chambers, where my busied ghost
Was forming spells and mystic characters,
Dulcinea's voice (peerless Tobosan maid)
With mournful accents reach'd my pitying ears.
I knew her woe, her metamorphos'd form,
From high-born beauty in a palace graced,
To the loath'd features of a cottage wench.
With sympathising grief I straight revolv'd
The numerous tomes of my detested art.
And, in the hollow of this skeleton
My soul enclosing, hither am I come,
To tell the cure of such uncommon ills.

O glory thou of all that case their limbs
In polished steel, and fenceful adamant,
Light, beacon, polar star, and glorious guide
Of all, who, starting from the lazy down,
Banish ignoble sleep, for the rude toil,
And hardy exercise of errant arms;
Spain's boasted pride, La Mancha's matchless knigl
Whose valiant deeds outstrip pursuing fame!
Would'st thou to beauty's pristine state restore
Th' enchanted dame, Sancho, thy faithful squire,
Must to his brawny buttocks, bare expos'd,
Three thousand and three hundred stripes apply,

...enchantments. Before God, if S
find out no other way to disenchant tl
del Toboso, enchanted she may go to
I shall take you, Don peasant stuffed w
Don Quixote, and tie you to a tree,
mother bore you, and I say not thre
three hundred, but six thousand six hur
I give you, and those so well laid on, th
be able to let them off at three thousan
hard tugs: so answer me not a word;
out your very soul: which Merlin heari
must not be so; for the lashes that hone
receive must be with his good-will, and
and at what time he pleases; for there i
but he is allowed, if he pleases, to sav
pain of one half of this flogging by suffe
half to be laid on by another hand, a
somewhat weighty. Neither another's
own, nor one weighty, nor to be weighe
me, quoth Sancho: did I bring forth the
del Toboso, that my posteriors must pay
gressions of her eyes? My master, indee
of her, since at every step he is calling h
soul, his support, and stay, he can and
himself for her, and take

lucky squire, soul of a pitcher, heart of a
nd bowels full of gravel and flints! had you
se-slitting thief, to throw yourself headlong
igh tower; had you been desired, enemy
ind, to eat a dozen of toads, two of lizards,
of snakes; had any body endeavoured to
u to kill your wife and children with some
sharp scimitar; no wonder if you had be-
awillingness and aversion; but to make a
iree thousand three hundred lashes, which
school-boy receives every month, it amazes,
nd affrights the tender bowels of all who
even of all who shall hereafter be told it.
able and hard-hearted animal, cast, I say,
oggle* eyes of thine upon the balls of mine,
o glittering stars, and you will see them
after drop, and stream after stream,† mak-
, tracks, and paths, down the beauteous
cheeks. Relent, subtile and ill-intentioned
my blooming youth, still in its teens (for
neteen, and not quite twenty) pining and
nder the bark of a coarse country wench:
his time I appear otherwise, it is by the
vour of Signor Merlin here present, merely
rms may soften you; for the tears of af-
ty turn rocks into cotton, and tigers into
h, untamed beast, lash that brawny flesh
d rouse from base sloth that courage, which
s you to eat, and eat again; and set at lib-
ekness of my skin, the gentleness of my
the beauty of my face: and if, for my sake,
be mollified, nor come to any reasonable
for the sake of that poor knight there by
your master, I mean, whose soul I see
sswise in his throat, not ten inches from
ecting nothing but your rigid or mild an-
to jump out of his mouth, or to return to

xote, hearing this, put his finger to his
el, and turning to the duke, said: before

---

y, "*your eyes of* a little starting mule."
; "*thread* after thread, and skein after

[illegible], nor, at present, I can
ind to mind niceties, nor a letter more or less
ese lashes which are to be given me, or I must
yself, keep me so disturbed that I know not wh
y, or what I do. But one thing I would fain k
m the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, where she lear
way of entreaty she uses. She comes to desire
r my flesh with stripes, and at the same time c
soul of a pitcher, and untamed beast; with suc
d-roll of ill names that the devil may bear them
. What! does she think my flesh is made of bra
is it any thing to me whether she be disenchant
no? Instead of bringing a basket of fine lin
rts, night-caps, and socks (though I wear none)
llify me, here is nothing but reproach upon reproa
en she might have known the common proverb, t
ass loaden with gold mounts nimbly up the hi
, Presents break rocks; and, Pray to God devout
hammer on stoutly; and, One take is worth t
give thee's. Then my master, instead of whe
and coaxing me, to make myself of wool and ca
cotton, says, if he takes me in hand, he will tie
ed with a rope to a tree, and double me the dose
oes. Besides, these compassionate gentlefo
ht to consider, that they do not only desire to b

·hearted governor; one who relents not at the of afflicted damsels, nor at the entreaties of wise, , and ancient enchanters, and sages. In fine, ıo, either you must whip yourself, or let others you, or be no governor. My lord, answered ɔo, may I not be allowed two days to consider is best for me to do? No, in no wise, quoth Mer- ıere, at this instant, and upon this spot, the busi- nust be settled; or Dulcinea must return to Mon- ɔe' cave, and to her former condition of a country h; or else in her present form be carried to the an fields, where she must wait till the number of ıshes be fulfilled. Come, honest Sancho, quoth uchess, be of good cheer, and shew gratitude for read you have eaten of your master Don Quix- , whom we are all bound to serve for his good ties, and his high chivalries. Say, yes, son, to whipping bout, and the devil take the devil, and ıe wretched fear; for, A good heart breaks bad ne, as you well know.

ı these words Sancho answered with these extrav- ces; for, speaking to Merlin, he said: Pray tell Signor Merlin, the court devil, who came hither, ered my master a message from Signor Montesi- bidding him wait for him here, for he was coming ve directions about the disenchantment of the la- Dulcinea del Toboso; and to this hour we have ıer seen Montesinos, nor any likeness of his; pray, e is he? To which Merlin answered: The devil, d Sancho, is a blockhead, and a very great rascal: ıt him in quest of your master, with a message, from Montesinos, but from me; for Montesinos is in his cave, plotting, or to say better, expecting isenchantment: for the worst is still behind;* if wes you ought, or you have any business with him, l fetch him hither, and set him wherever you ı fit: and therefore come to a conclusion, and say o this discipline; and, believe me, it will do you h good, as well your soul as your body; for your , in regard of the charity with which you will per-

* *Aun le falta la cola por desollar,*" i. e. "The tail *remains to be flayed.*" Which is the most trou *ne and hard to be done.*

upon condition that I may lay them on
please, without being tied to days or times
endeavour to get out of debt the soonest th
can, that the world may enjoy the beauty
Dulcinea del Toboso, since, contrary to wh
it seems she is in reality beautiful. I artic
that I will not be bound to draw blood wit
and if some lashes happen only to fly-flap, t
taken into the account. Item, if I should
the reckoning, Signor Merlin, who knows
shall keep the account, and give me notice
I want or have exceeded. As for the
there is no need of keeping account, answe
for, as soon as you arrive at the complete n
lady Dulcinea del Toboso will be instantly
ed, and will come, in a most grateful mann
honest Sancho, to thank, and even reward
good deed done. So that there need be
about the surpluses or deficiencies; and hea
I should cheat any body of so much as a ha
head. Go to, then, in God's name, quoth
submit to my ill fortune; I say, I accept o
ance upon the conditions stipulated.

Scarcely had Sancho uttered these words
music of the waits struck up and a world-

The earth rejoiced, the sky was clear, and the air serene; each singly, and all together, giving manifest tokens, that the day which trod upon Aurora's heels would be fair and clear. The duke and duchess, being satisfied with the sport, and having executed their design so ingeniously and happily, returned to their castle, with an intention of seconding their jest; since nothing real could have afforded them more pleasure.

CHAP. IV.

Wherein is related the strange and never-imagined adventure of the afflicted matron, alias, the countess of Trifaldi; with a letter written by Sancho Panza to his wife Teresa Panza.

The duke had a steward, of a very pleasant and facetious wit, who represented Merlin, and contrived the whole apparatus of the late adventure, composed the verses, and made a page act Dulcinea. And now, with the duke and duchess's leave, he prepared another scene, of the pleasantest and strangest contrivance imaginable.

The next day, the duchess asked Sancho, whether he had begun the task of the penance he was to do for the disenchanting of Dulcinea. He said, he had, and had given himself five lashes that night. The duchess desired to know, with what he had given them. He answered, with the palm of his hand. That, replied the duchess, is rather clapping than whipping; and I am of opinion, Signor Merlin will hardly be contented at so easy a rate. Honest Sancho must get a rod made of briars, or of whip-cord, that the lashes may be felt; her letters written in blood stand good, and the liberty of so great a lady as Dulcinea is not to be purchased so easily, or at so low a price. And take notice, Sancho, that works of charity, done faintly and coldly, lose their merit, and signify nothing. To which Sancho answered: Give me, then, madam, some rod, or convenient bough, and I will whip myself with it, provided it do not smart too much; for I would have your ladyship know, that, though I am a clown, my rush has more of the cotton than of the rush, and they

account of all that has [illegible]
om her; here I have it in my bosom, and
thing but the superscription. I wish your d
ould read it: for methinks it runs as becom
nor, I mean, in the manner that governors
rite. And who indited it? demanded the
Who should indite it, but I myself, sinner
nswered Sancho. And did you write it?
uchess. No, indeed, answered Sancho; f
either read nor write, though I can set
et us see it, said the duchess; for no doubt
n it the quality and sufficiency of your genii
ho pulled an open letter out of his bosom
luchess, taking it in her hand, saw the cont
as follows:

Sancho Panza's letter to his wife Teresa.

"If I have been finely lashed, I have b
mounted; if I have got a good government,
me many good lashes. This, my dear Tere
not understand at present; another time
You must know, Teresa, that I am deter
shall ride in your coach, which is somew
[illegible] for all other ways of going are cre

much disenchanted as the mother that bore her. othing of this to any body; for, go to give coun- out what is your own, and one will cry, it is , another, it is black. A few days hence I shall the government, whither I go with an eager de-) make money; for, I am told, all new governors th the self-same intention. I will feel its pulse, and you word whether you shall come and be ne, or no. Dapple is well, and sends his hearty e to you: I do not intend to leave him, though I to be made the great Turk. The duchess, my ss, kisses your hands a thousand times: return vo thousand; for nothing costs less, nor is cheap- my master says, than compliments of civility. has not been pleased to bless me with another anteau, and another hundred crowns, as once): but be in no pain, my dear Teresa; for he that ie repique in hand* is safe, and all will out in the ng of the government. Only one thing troubles for I am told, if I once try it, I shall eat my very s after it; and, if so, it would be no very good in; though the crippled and lame in their hands a kind of petty-canonry in the alms they receive: it, by one means or another, you are sure to be nd happy. God make you so, as he easily can, eep me to serve you.

Your husband, the governor,
SANCHO PANZA.

this castle, the 20th
of July, 1614.

e duchess, having read the letter, said to Sancho: o things the good governor is a little out of the the one, in saying, or insinuating, that this gov- nt is given him on account of the lashes he is to imself; whereas he knows and cannot deny it, when my lord duke promised it him, nobody ed of any such thing as lashes in the world: the is that he shews himself in it very covetous; and ld not have him be griping; for, Avarice bursts g, and, The covetous governor does ungoverned e. That is not my meaning, madam, answered

* *In allusion to the game at picquet.*

They dined, and, after the cloth was taken awa
they had entertained themselves a good whil
Sancho's refishing conversation, on a sudden
heard the dismal sound of a fife, and also tha
hoarse and unbraced drum. They all discovere
surprise at the confused, martial, and doleful har
especially Don Quixote, who could not contain
self in his seat through pure emotion. As for S
it is enough to say, that fear carried him to his
refuge, which was the duchess's side, or the ski
her petticoat: for the sound they heard was real
truly most horrid and melancholy. And, whil
were thus in suspense, they perceived two men
the garden, clad in mourning robes, so long and
ded, that they trailed upon the ground. They
beating two great drums, covered also with black
their side came the fife, black and frightful lil
rest. These three were followed by a persona
gigantic stature, not clad, but mantled about,
robe of the blackest die, the train whereof wa
monstrous length. This robe was girt about
broad black belt, at which there hung an unmeas
scimitar in a black scabbard. His face was co
with a transparent black veil, through which app
a prodigious long beard, as white as snow. He

best furnished beard, that human eyes till then had ever beheld; and straight he sent forth from his broad and ample breast, a voice grave and sonorous; and, fixing his exes on the duke, he said: Most mighty and puissant sir, I am called Trifaldin of the white beard; I am squire to the countess Trifaldi, otherwise called the Afflicted Matron, from whom I bring your grandeur a message; which is, that your magnificence would be pleased to give her permission and leave to enter, and tell her distress, which is one of the newest and most wonderful, that the most distressed thought in the world could ever have imagined: but first she desires to know, whether the valorous and invincible Don Quixote de la Mancha resides in this your castle; in quest of whom she is come on foot, and without breaking her fast, from the kingdom of Candaya to this your territory; a thing which may and ought to be considered as a miracle, or ascribed to the force of enchantment. She waits at the door of this fortress or country house, and only stays for your good pleasure to come in. Having said this he hemmed, and stroked his beard from top to bottom with both his hands, and with much tranquillity stood expecting the duke's answer, which was: It is now many days, honest squire Trifaldin of the white beard, since we have had notice of the misfortune of my lady the countess Trifaldi, whom the enchanters have occasioned to be called the afflicted matron. Tell her, stupendous squire, she may enter, and that the valiant knight Don Quixote de la Mancha is here, from whose generous disposition she may safely promise herself all kind of aid and assistance. Tell her also from me, that if my favour be necessary, it shall not be wanting, since I am bound to it by being a knight; for to such it particularly belongs to protect all sorts of women, especially injured and afflicted matrons, such as her ladyship. Trifaldin, hearing this, bent a knee to the ground, and, making a sign to the fife and drums to play, he walked out of the garden to the same tune, and with the same solemnity as he came in, leaving every one in admiration at his figure and deportment.

The duke *then, turning to* Don Quixote, said: In *fact, renowned knight, neither* the clouds of malice, *nor those of ignorance,* can hide or obscure the light

run and spread themselves over the whole
earth. I wish, my lord duke, answered D
that the same ecclesiastic, who the other
ed so much ill-will and so great a grudge
errant, were now here, that he might see v
whether or no such knights as those are
the world: at least he would be made sensi
extraordinary afflicted and disconsolate, in
and in enormous mishaps, do not fly for a re
houses of scholars, nor to those of cou
priests, nor to the cavalier, who never think
from his own towe, nor to the lazy courtie
er inquires after news to tell again, than e
perform actions and exploits for others t
write of him. Remedy for distress, relief
ties, protection of damsels, and consolation
are no where so readily to be found, as amo
errant; and that I am one, I give infinite
heaven, and shall not repine at any hardshi
that can befal me in so honourable an exe
this matron come, and make what request
for I will commit her redress to the force
and the intrepid resolution of my courageo

an duenna should lay any stumbling-block in
of my promised government; for I have h
apothecary of Toledo, who talked like any go
say, that, Where duennas have to do, no goo
can e'er ensue. Odds my life! what an enem
that apothecary to them! and therefore, since
ennas are troublesome and impertinent, of what
or condition soever they be, what must the afflict
as they say this same countess Three-skirts or T
tails is" for in my country, skirts and tails, and
and skirts, are all one. Peace, friend Sancho,
Don Quixote; for, since this lady duenna come
quest of me from so remote a country, she canno
one of those the apothecary has in his list. Besi
this is a countess; and when countesses serve as du
nas, it must be as attendants upon queens and empre
es; for in their own houses they command, and
served by other duennas. To this Donna Rodrigu
who was present, answered: My lady duchess has d
ennas in her service, who might have been countesse
if fortune had pleased; but, Laws go on king's errands
and let no one speak ill of duennas, especially of th
ancient maiden ones; for though I am not of that num
ber, yet I well know, and clearly perceive the advar
tage a maiden duenna has over a widow duenna; thoug
pair of sheers cut us all out of the same piece. F
ll that, replied Sancho, there is still so much to b
eered about your duennas, as my barber tells m
at it is better not to stir the rice, though it burn t
e pot These squires, quoth Donna Rodriguez, ar
vays our enemies; and, as they are a kind of fairie
t haunt the anti-chambers, and spy us at every turn
hours they are not at their beads, which are not
, they employ in speaking ill of us, unburying ou
s, and burying our reputations. But let me te
e moving blocks, that, in spite of their teeth, w
live in the world, and in the best families to
h we starve for it, and cover our delicate or n
te bodies with a black weed, as people cover
ill with a piece of tapestry on a procession da
th, if I might, and if I had time, I would ma

uding to the name Trifaldi, as if it were "T

>, and care not a hg for all the duennas in the

ialogue about duennas had continued, had
heard the drum and fife strike up again; by
ey understood the afflicted matron was just
The duchess asked the duke, whether it
proper to go and meet her, since she was a
and a person of quality. As she is a coun-
th Sancho, before the duke could answer, it is
our grandeurs should go to receive her; but,
a duenna, I am of opinion you should not stir
Who bid you intermeddle in this matter, San-
d Don Quixote. Who, sir? answered San-
nyself, who have a right to intermeddle as a
ho has learned the rules of courtesy in the
your worship, who is the best bred knight
ever produced: and in these matters, as I
rd your worship say, one may as well lose the
a card too much as a card too little; and a
the wise. It is even so, as Sancho says, quoth
; we shall soon see what kind of a countess

CHAP. VI.

:count is given of the afflicted matron's misfortune.

doleful music, there began to enter the duennas, divided into two files, all clad ing habits, seemingly of milled serge, s of thin muslin, so long that only the robe appeared. After these came the di, whom squire Trifaldin of the white he hand.* She was clad in a robe of ; which had it been napped, each grain n the size of a good ronceval-pea. The ıll it which you will) was divided into supported by three pages, clad also in ing a sightly and mathematical figure, .e angles, formed by the three corners ; that saw them concluded she was from ıe countess Trifaldi, as much as to say, the three skirts : and Ben Engeli says, ıth of the matter, and that her right ıuntess Lobuna, because that earldom ance of wolves ;† and had they been f wolves, she would have been styled na, it being the custom in those parts s to take their titles from the thing or ich their country most abounded. But ı favour of the new cut of her train, Lobuna, and took that of Trifaldi. The

ıany such adventures as this in the old ıs, a damsel in deep mourning, led un- ıy an ancient knight, enters the grand palace of Constantinople, and there ;eping, begs pity on a distressed maid- ıffered the greatest outrage imaginable. *aul*, b. 14, chap. 48. So likewise, a comes into a hall, and accosts prince ıg him she is the most afflicted damsel *l begging him* to redress a wrong done *ndo of England*, ch. 26.

g. ‡ Zorras.

duchess halted and made a passage, through wl
Afflicted advanced, without Trifaldin's letting
hand. Which the duke, duchess, and Don (
seeing, they stepped forward about a dozen p
receive her. She, kneeling on the ground,
voice rather harsh and coarse, than fine and d
said: May it please your grandeurs to spare
scending to do so great a courtesy to this your
I mean your handmaid: for such is my afflicti
I shall not be able to answer as I ought, beca
strange and unheard-of misfortune has carrie
my understanding, I know not whither; and
must be a vast way off, since the more I seek
less I find it. He would want it, lady countess
the duke, who could not judge of your worth l
person, which, without seeing any more, mer
whole cream of courtesy, and the whole flower
bred ceremonies: and, raising her by the hand,
her to a chair close by the duchess, who also r
her with much civility. Don Quixote held his
and Sancho was dying with impatience to see t
of the Trifaldi, or of some one of her many du
but it was not possible, till they of their own
unveiled themselves.

Now all keeping silence, and in expectati

za, be in this bosom, circle, or company.* Panza, Sancho, before any one else could answer, is here, also Don Quixotissimo; and therefore, afflictedis- matronissima, say what you have a mindissima; we are all ready and preparedissimos to be your itorissimos.† Upon this Don Quixote stood up, directing his discourse to the afflicted matron, : If your distresses, afflicted lady, can promise nselves any remedy from the valour or fortitude of night-errant, behold mine, which though weak and ity, shall all be employed in your service. I am Quixote de la Mancha, whose function is to suc- r the distressed of all sorts; and this being so, as it ly is, you need not, madam, bespeak good-will, nor e recourse to preambles, but plainly, and without cir- locution, tell your griefs; for you are within hear- of those who know how to compassionate, if not to ress them. Which the afflicted matron hearing made a shew as if she would prostrate herself at n Quixote's feet; and actually did so, and, strug- g to kiss them, said: I prostrate myself, O invinci- knight, before these feet and legs, as the basis and ars of knight-errantry: these feet will I kiss, on ose steps the whole remedy of my misfortune hangs l depends. O valorous errant, whose true exploits strip and obscure the fabulous ones of the Amadises, olandians, and Belianises. And, leaving Don Quix- , she turned to Sancho Panza, and taking him by hand, said: O thou the most trusty squire that ev- served knight-errant, in the present or past ages, ose goodness is of greater extent than the beard of companion Trifaldin here present, well may'st thou

* So the duchess of Asturia comes before the empe- of Trebisonda and inquires for the knight of the here, or of the True-Cross, or the solitary knight.— *adis de Gaul.* b. 6, ch. 36.

† It is observable that Sancho has acuteness enough answer the matron in her own fustian stile; while n Quixote, having no notion of ridicule, lets it pass. e reader must have taken notice how much Sancho improved in this second part; for acuteness or af- *tation seem not* to have belonged to his origina *racter.*

... long and as l
... squire's beard, signifies little to me: so
l be bearded and whiskered, when it depa
, I care little or nothing for beards here be...
hout these wheedlings and beseechings, I ...
my master, who I know has a kindness f
ecially now that he wants me for a certain bu
ivour and assist your ladyship in whatever l
undle your griefs, madam, and let us into tl
ars: and leave us alone to manage, for we
rstand one another. The duke and duches
y to burst with laughing at all this, as kn
lrift of this adventure, and commended in
ghts the smartness and dissimulation of the T
ho, returning to her seat, said:—
the famous kingdom of Candaya, which li
n the great Taprobana and the South Sea
es from Cape Camorin, was queen Donna
a, widow of king Archipiela her lord and
from which marriage sprung the Infanta An
, heiress of the kingdom; which Infanta An
was educated under my care and instructio
the most ancient duenna, and of the best qu
those that waited upon her mother. No
of time, the young Antonomasia arrived t
fourteen, with such perfect...

amoured. Among whom, a private gentleman
court dared to raise his thoughts to the heaven
much beauty, confiding in his youth, his genteel
his many abilities and graces, and the facility an
city of his wit: for I must tell your grandeurs, i
no offence, that he touched a guitar so as to m
speak. He was, besides, a poet, and a fine dance
could make bird-cages so well, as to get his livi
it, in case of extreme necessity. So many qu
tions and endowments were sufficient to ove
mountain, and much more a tender virgin. But
gentility, graceful behaviour, and fine accomplish
would have signified little or nothing towards th
quest of my girl's fortress, if the robber and ruffi
not artfully contrived to reduce me first. The a
and barbarous vagabond began with endeavouri
obtain my good-will, and suborn my inclination,
might, like a treacherous keeper as I was, delive
him the keys of the fortress I guarded. In sh
imposed upon my understanding, and got from r
consent, by means of I know not what toys and
kets he presented me with. But that, which
brought me down, and levelled me with the g
was a stanza, which I heard him sing one night, t
a grate that looked into an alley where he stood
if I remember right, the verses were these:—

The tyrant fair, whose beauty sent
The throbbing mischief to my heart,
The more my anguish to augment,
Forbids me to reveal the smart.

The stanza seemed to me to be of pearls, a
voice of barley-sugar; and many a time since
thought, considering the mishap I fell into, that
at least the lascivious, ought, as Plato advised,
banished from all good and well-regulated co
wealths; because they write couplets, not like
of the marquess of Mantua, which divert, and
children and women weep, but such pointed thi
like smooth thorns, pierce the soul, and woun
lightning, leaving the garment whole and un
Another time he sung,—

lome, Death, with gently-stealing pace,
And take me, unperceiv'd, away;
lor let me see thy wish'd-for face,
Lest joy my fleeting life should stay.

with such couplets and ditties as enchant v
sung, surprise when written. Now, when
conde nd of verses, at that
in fash hich they call rounde
they p ancing of the soul, a
ling of ual agitation of the b
and, la cksilver of all the se
And th noble auditors, that
versifiers deserve to be banished to the isle of Liza
though in truth they are not to blame, but the sin
tons who commend them, and the idiots who be
them; and, had I been the honest duenna I ought
nightly serenades had not moved me, nor had I be
ed those poetical expressions: Dying I live; in
burn; I shiver in flames; in despair I hope; I go
stay; with other impossibilities of the like stam
which their writings are full. And when they pro
us the phœnix of Arabia, the crown of Ariadne
hairs of the sun, the pearls of the South Sea, the
of Tiber, and the balsam of Pancaya; they then
their pen the greatest scope, as it costs them litt
promise what they never intend, nor can perf
But, woe is me, unhappy wretch! whither do I st
what folly or what madness hurries me to recoun
faults of others. having so many of my own to rel
Woe is me again, unhappy creature! for not his ve
but my own simplicity vanquished me: not the m
but my levity, my great ignorance, and my little
tion, melted me down, opened the way, and smoo
the passage for Don Clavijo; for that is the nam
the aforesaid cavalier. And so, I being the go-betw
he was often in the chamber of the betrayed, no
him but me, Antonomasia, under the title of her
ful husband: for, though a sinner, I would never
consented, without his being her husband, tha
should have come within the showed of her
string. No, no, marriage must be the forerunne
any business of this kind undertaken by me: only
was one mischief in it, which was, the disparit

tween them; Don Clavijo being but a private gentleman, and the Infanta Antonomasia heiress, as I have already said, of the kingdom. This intrigue lay concealed and wrapped up in the sagacity of my cautious management for some time, till I perceived it began to shew itself in I know not what kind of swelling in Antonomasia's belly; the apprehension whereof made us three lay our heads together; and the result was, that, before the unhappy slip should come to light, Don Clavijo should demand Antonomasia in marriage before the vicar, in virtue of a contract, signed by the Infanta and given him, to be his wife, worded by my wit, and in such strong terms, that the force of Sampson was not able to break through it. The business was put in execution; the vicar saw the contract, and took the lady's confession; she acknowledged the whole, and was ordered into the custody of an honest alguazil* of the court. Here Sancho said: What! are there court-alguazils, poets, and roundelays in Candaya too? if so, I swear, I think the world is the same every where: but, madam Trifaldi, pray make haste: for it grows late, and I die to hear the end of this so very long story. That I will, answered the countess.

CHAP. VII.

Wherein Trifaldi continues her stupendous and memorable history.

At every word Sancho spoke, the duchess was in as high delight as Don Quixote was at his wit's end; who commanding him to hold his peace, the Afflicted went on, saying: In short, after many pros and cons the Infanta standing stiffly to her engagement, without varying or departing from the first declaration, the vicar pronounced sentence in favour of Don Clavijo, and gave her to him to wife: at which the queen Donna Maguncia, mother of the Infanta Antonomasia, was so much disturbed, that we buried her in three days' time. She died then, I suppose, quoth Sancho. Most assuredly, answered Trifaldin; for in Candaya they do not

* *A sort of* bailiff or sergeant.

many others have done, a
mischief had been without ren
made choice of a cavalier, so n
of such parts as he is here painte
though perhaps it was foolish, it
so as some people think: for, acc
my master, who is here present,
lie, as bishops are made out of le
and emperors may be made out of
if they are errant. You are in the
Don Quixote; for a knight-errant
inches of good luck, is next oars t
lord in the world. But let madan
for I fancy the bitter part of this h
is still behind. The bitter behi
countess: ay, and so bitter, that, in
wood is sweet, and rue savoury.

The queen being now dead, and
we buried her; and scarcely had we
earth and pronounced the last farew
talia fando temperet a lachrymis?"
sepulchre appeared, mounted on a w
giant Malambruno, her cousin-germa
ing cruel, is an enchanter also. This
of his cousin's death and

›r his great valour alone." This done, he
of the scabbard a broad and unmeasurable
and taking me by the hair of my head, he
v as if he would cut my throat, or whip off
.t a blow. I was frighted to death, and my
.k in my throat: nevertheless, recovering
vell as I could, with a trembling and doleful
ed such entreaties as prevailed with him to
ıe execution of so rigorous a punishment.
sent for all the duennas of the palace, being
present, and, after having exaggerated our
inveighed against the qualities of duennas,
ɔd plots, and worse intrigues, and charging
all that blame which I alone deserved, he
uld not chastise us with capital punishment,
:her lengthened pains, which should put us
f civil and perpetual death: and in the very
had done speaking, we all felt the pores of
ıpen, and a pricking pain all over them, liko
g of needles. Immediately we clapped our
ur faces, and found them in the condition
ɜe presently.
: Afflicted, and the rest of the duennas,
ıe veils which concealed them, and discov-
ıces all planted with beards, some red, some
: white, and some piebald: at which sight
ıd duchess seemed to wonder, Don Quixote
ı were amazed, and all present astonished;
ifaldi proceeded: Thus that wicked and
. felon Malambruno punished us, covering
ɔothness of our faces with the ruggedness
istles: would to heaven he had struck off
ıith his unmeasurable scimitar, rather than
ed the light of our countenances with these
t overspread them! for, noble lords and la-
ghtly consider it, (and what I am now going
ıld speak with rivers of tears, but that the
ın of our misfortunes, and the seas our eyes
y wept, keep them without moisture, and
eards of corn; and therefore I will speak it
rs) I say then, whither can a duenna with
what father or what mother will bewail
vill succour her? for, even when her grain
best, and her face tortured with a thou-

and sorts of washes and oint
find any body to shew kindnes
do then, when her face is bec
ennes, my dear companions, i
we born, and in an evil minute
ne: and, so saying, she seemed

CHAP. V

Of matters relating and app
ture, and to this mem

In reality and truth, all wh
ries as this, ought to be thankf
Cid Hamete, for his curious ex
minutest circumstances thereo
thing how trifling soever, bu
distinctly to light. He paints
aginations, answers the silent
solves arguments; and, lastly
oms of the most inquisitive des
author! O happy Don Quixot
O facetious Sancho Panza!
severally infinite ages, for th
pastime of the living.

Now the story says, that, wh
flicted faint away, he said: U
est man, and by the blood of
Panzas, I swear, I never hea
master ever told me, nor did s
ever enter into his thoughts.
thee (I would not curse any b
and a giant, Malambruno! cou
kind of punishment to inflict
that of bearding them? Had
sure it had been better for the
half their noses, though they h
to have clapped them on beard
they have not wherewith to pa
true, sir, answered one of th
wherewith to keep ourselves c
shift as well as we can, some
ters of pitch; which being ap

nailed off with a jerk, we remain as sleek and smooth as the bottom of a stone mortar: for, though there are women in Candaya, who go from house to house, to take off the hair of the body, and shape the eye-brows, and other jobs pertaining to women, we, who are my lady's duennas, would never have any thing to do with them; for the most of them smell of the procuress, having ceased to be otherwise serviceable:* and if we are not relieved by Signor Don Quixote, with beards shall we be carried to our graves. Mine, quoth Don Quixote, shall be plucked off in the country of the Moors, rather than not free you from yours.

By this time the Trifaldi was come to herself, and said: The murmuring sound of the promise, valorous knight, in the midst of my swoon, reached my ears, and was the occasion of my coming out of it, and recovering my senses: and so once again I beseech you, illustrious errant, and invincible sir, that your gracious promises may be converted into deeds. It shall not rest at me, anwered Don Quixote; inform me, madam, what it is I am to do; for my inclination is fully disposed to serve you. The case is, answered the Afflicted, that, from hence to the kingdom of Candaya, if you go by land, it is five thousand leagues, one or two more or less; but if you go through the air in a direct line, it is three thousand two hundred and twenty-seven. You must know also, that Malambruno told me, that, when fortune should furnish me with the knight our deliverer, he would send him a steed, much better, and with fewer vicious tricks than a post horse returned to his stage; for it is to be that very wooden horse upon which the valiant Peter of Provence carried off the fair Magalona. This horse is governed by a pin he has in his forehead, which serves for a bridle; and he flies through the air with such swiftness, that one would think the devil himself carried him. This same horse, according to ancient tradition, was the workmanship of the sage Merlin, who lent him to Peter, who was his friend; upon which he

* Here is a pun in the original. "Oliscan a terceras, aviendo dexada de ser primas." Tercera signifies a Third or Go-between, and Prima a First or Principal. That is, in plain English, Bawd after Whore.

ce, and the [illegible]
that this same horse neither eats nor sleeps, nor
s any shoeing, and ambles such a pace through
air, without wings, that his rider may carry a
ul of water in his hand without spilling a drop,
avels so smooth and easy; which made the fair
alona take great delight in riding him.
o this Sancho said: For smooth and easy goings,
mend me to my Dapple, though he goes not through
air: but by land, I will match him against all the
lers in the world. This set the company a laugh-
and the Afflicted proceeded: Now this horse, if
ambruno intends to put an end to our misfortune
be here within half an hour after it is dark; fo
old me, that the sign, by which I should be assure
having found that knight I sought after, should b
sending me the horse to the place where the knigh
, with conveniency and speed. And pray, quoth
icho, how many can ride upon this same horse
o persons, answered the Afflicted, one in the sad
, and the other behind on the crupper, and general
hese two persons are the knight and his squire
en there is no stolen damsel in the case. I shoul
glad to know, madam Afflicted, quoth Sancho
at this horse's name is. His name, answered th
[illegible] Pegasus, as was that of Bellerophon

...om and life. I will venture a wager, quoth San-... since they have given him none of those famous ...l well known names, neither have they given him ...st of my master's horse Rosinante, which in propriety exceeds all that have been hitherto named. True, answered the bearded countess, but still it suits him well; for he is called Clavileno the winged; which name answers to his being of wood, to the peg in his forehead, and to the swiftness of his motion; so that, in respect of his name, he may very well come in competition with the renowned Rosinante. I dislike not the name, replied Sancho: but with what bridle, or with what halter, is he guided? I have already told you, answered the Trifaldi, that he is guided by a peg, which the rider turning this way and that, makes him go either aloft in the air, or else sweeping, and, as it were, brushing the earth; or in the middle region, which is what is generally aimed at, and is to be kept to in all well-ordered actions.

I have a great desire to see him, answered Sancho; but to think that I will get upon him, either in the saddle, or behind upon the crupper, is to look for pears upon an elm-tree. It were a good jest indeed, for me, who can hardly sit my own Dapple, though upon a pannel softer than the very silk, to think now of getting upon a crupper of boards, without either pillow or cushion: in faith, I do not intend to flay myself, to take off any body's beard; let every one shave as he likes best; I shall not bear my master company in so long a journey: besides, I am out of the question; for I can be of no service towards the shaving these beards, as I am for the disenchanting of my lady Dulcinea. Indeed, but you can, friend, answered the Trifaldi, and of so much service, that without you, as I take it, we are likely to do nothing at all. In the king's name, quoth Sancho, what have squires to do with their master's adventures? must they run away with the fame of those they accomplish, and must we undergo the fatigue? Body of me! did the historians but say, such a knight achieved such and such an adventure, with the help of such an one, his squire, without whom it had been impossible for him to finish it, it were something, but you *shall have them* drily write thus: Don Pard... *pomenon of the three stars*, achieved the adventure

ear him company, if need be, and [illegible]
: of good people; for it would be a great pity
ces of these ladies should remain thus bushy
h your needless fears. In the king's name once
replied Sancho, were this piece of charity un-
en for modest, sober damsels, or for poor inno-
ospital-girls, a man might venture upon some
taking; but, to endure it to rid duennas of their
s, with a murrain to them, I had rather see them
arded from the highest to the lowest, and from
icest to the most slatternly. You are upon very
erms with the duennas, friend Sancho, quoth the
ess, and are much of the Toledan apothecary's
: but in troth you are in the wrong; for I have
nas in my family, fit to be patterns to all duennas:
here stands Donna Rodriguez, who will not con-
ct me. Your excellency may say what you please,
h Rodriguez; for God knows the truth of every
g, and, good or bad, bearded or smooth, such as we
our mothers brought us forth, like other women;
since God cast us into the world, he knows for
t; and I rely upon his mercy, and not upon any
y's beard whatever.
nough, mistress Rodriguez, quoth Don Quixote;
[illegible] and company, I trust in God,

ds, then my sword shall shave off Malambruno's ad from his shoulders; for though God permits the ricked to prosper, it is but for a time. Ah! quoth the Afflicted, at this juncture, valorous knight, may all the stars of the celestial regions behold your worship with eyes of benignity, and infuse into your heart all prosperity and courage, to be the shield and refuge of our reviled and dejected order, abominated by apothecaries, murmured at by squires, and scoffed at by pages. Ill betide the wretch, who, in the flower of her age, does rather profess herself a nun, than a duenna. Unfortunate we the duennas! though we descended in a direct male line from Hector of Troy, our mistresses will never forbear "thouing" us, were they to be made queens for it. O giant Malambruno, who, though thou art an enchanter, art very punctual in thy promises, send us now the incomparable Clavileno, that our misfortune may have an end; for, if the heats come on, and these beards of ours continue, woe be to us. The Trifaldi uttered this with so deep a concern, that she drew tears from the eyes of all the by-standers, and even made Sancho's overflow; and he purposed in his heart to accompany his master to the farthest part of the world, if on that depended the clearing of those venerable faces of their wool.

CHAP. IX.

Of the arrival of Clavileno, with the conclusion of this prolix adventure.*

In the mean while night came on, and with it the point of time prefixed for the arrival of the famous horse Clavileno; whose stay perplexed Don Quixote very much, thinking that, since Malambruno delayed sending him, either he was not the knight for whom this adventure was reserved, or Malambruno durst not encounter him in single combat. But, behold, on a sudden, four savages enter the garden, all clad in green ivy, and bearing on their shoulders a large wooden

* *A name derived from two Spanish words, "Clavo" a nail or pin, and "leno," wood.*

other body's sword or lance shall hurt him
here is no more to do, but to screw the pin he h
forehead, and he will bear them through the a
place where Malambruno expects them: but le
ight and sublimity of the way should make the
swim, their eyes must be covered until the hor
s, which is to be the signal of his being arrived
urney's end. This said, leaving Clavileno, wi
ous demeanour they returned by the way the

soon as the Afflicted espied her horse, almo
tears, she said to Don Quixote: Valorous knigh
nbruno has kept his word; here is the horse; o
s are increasing, and every one of us, with ever
f them, beseech you to shave and shear us, sinc
is no more for you to do but to mount, with yo
behind you, and so give a happy beginning t
ew journey. That I will, with all my hear
ost willingly, madam Trifaldi, quoth Don Quix
ithout staying to procure a cushion, or put on m
o avoid delay; so great is the desire I have t
ur ladyship and all these duennas shaven an
That will not I, quoth Sancho, with a bad c
will, or any wise; and, if this shaving canno
ormed without my riding behind, let my maste

expects them: but [illegible]
way should make their
[illegible] until the horse
his being arrived at
ing Clavileno, with
d by the way they

horse, almost
[illegible] knight,
the horse; our
with every
r us, since
with your
[illegible] to
heart,
Quix-
on my
[illegible]

ne but is procu[illegible]
what I expect for t
your master Don G
to this memorable
upon Clavileno wi
or the contrary fo
on foot, turned pi
inn to inn, return
island where you
same desire to re
good-will shall b
truth, Signor Sa
jury to the incli
good sir, quoth
not carry so m
master get up;
and commend m
are in our altit
the angels to p
swered: You
you will; for
he is a christia
much sagacity
ing any body
and the most
the memorab
Quixote, I n
and were I a
lanimity wo
hither, Sanc
persons, I wo
vate.

A church
Trinity.

dred you stand engaged for; for, well begun ...
'ended. Before God, quoth Sancho, your worshi
ark mad: this is just the saying; You see I am i
.e, and you charge me with a maidenhead: no
: I am just going to sit down upon a bare board
ıld you have me gall my buttocks? verily, verily
r worship is in the wrong; let us now go and tri
se duennas, and, at my return, I promise you I wil
ke such dispatch to get out of debt, that your wo
p shall be contented, and I say no more. Do
ixote answered: With this promise then, hone
ncho, I am somewhat comforted, and believe yo
l perform it; for, though you are not over wise, yo
: true blue. I am not blue, but brown, quoth Sa
o; but though I were a mixture of both, I wou
ıke good my promise.

Upon this they came back, in order to mount Cla
ıo; and, at getting up, Don Quixote said: hood-wi
urself, and get up, Sancho; for whoever he be th
nds for us from countries so remote, he cannot su
intend to deceive us, considering the little glory
ıll get by deceiving those who confide in him: b
ppose the very reverse of what we imagine sho
ppen, no malice can obscure the glory of having
mpted the exploit. Let us be gone, sir, quoth S

dians of Troy, which was a wooden horse, dedi-
ed by the Greeks to the goddess Pallas, and filled
th armed knights, who afterwards proved the final
struction of Troy; and therefore it will not be amiss
see first what Clavileno has in his belly. There is
need of that, said the Afflicted; for I am confident
at Malambruno has nothing of the trickster or trai-
tor in him: your worship, Signor Don Quixote, may
mount without fear, and upon me be it if any harm
happens to you. Don Quixote considered, that to talk
any more of his security would be a reflection upon his
courage; and so, without further contest, he mounted
Clavileno, and tried the pin, which screwed about very
easily; and having no stirrups, and his legs dangling
down, he looked like a figure in a Roman triumph,
painted or woven in some antique piece of Flemish
tapestry.

By little and little, and much against his will, San-
cho got up behind, adjusting himself the best way he
could upon the crupper, which he found not over soft,
and begged the duke, if it were possible, to accommo-
date him with some pillow or cushion, though it were
from the duchess's state sopha, or from one of the
pages' beds; the horse's crupper seeming rather to be
of marble than of wood. To this the Trifaldi repli-
ed, that Clavileno would not endure any kind of fur-
niture upon him; but that he might sit sideways like a
woman, and then he would not be so sensible of the
hardness. Sancho did so, and, bidding adieu, he suf-
fered his eyes to be blindfolded. But, soon putting by
the bandage, and looking sorrowfully and with tears
upon all the folks in the garden, he begged them to as-
sist him, in that danger, with two pater-nosters, and
as many ave-marias, as they wished God might provide
somebody to do the like good office for them in the like
extremity. To which Don Quixote said: Thief, are
you upon the gallows, or at the last gasp, that you have
recourse to such doleful prayers? Are you not, poor-
spirited and dastardly creature, in the same place
which the fair Magalona occupied, and from which she
descended, not to the grave, but to be queen of
France, if histories lie not? And I! who sit by you
may I not vie with the valorous Peter, who press
this very seat that I now press? Cover, cover y

...y had he put his finger
when all the duennas and the standers-by l
their voices, saying: God be your guide, '
knight; God be with you, intrepid squire; nov
you mount into the air, breaking it with mor
ness than an arrow; now you begin to surpr
astonish all who behold you upon the earth: s
valorous Sancho; for you totter: beware lest y
or your fall will be worse than that of the
outh, who aspired to rule the chariot of his fatl
un. Sancho heard the voices, and, nestling cl
is master, and embracing him with his arms,
low can they say, sir, we have got so high,
eir voices reach us, and they seem to be t
ere hard by us? Never mind that, Sancho,
on Quixote; for, as these matters and these
e out of the ordinary course, you may see and
y thing a thousand leagues off: but do not sq
so hard; for you will tumble me down: ar
the truth, I do not see why you are so dist
l frighted; for I can safely swear, I never was
back of an easier-paced steed in all the days
: methinks we do not so much as stir fron
e. Banish fear, friend; for, in short, the bu
s as it should, and we have the wind in
t is true

airing him with several huge pair of bel
so well was this adventure concerted by the
duchess, and the steward, that nothing was
g to make it complete. Don Quixote now, f
the wind, said: Without all doubt, Sancho, we
by this time have reached the second region
air, where the hail and snows are formed: th
and lightning are engendered in the third region
if we go on mounting at his rate, we shall soon rea
region of fire; and I know not how to manag
peg so as not to mount where we shall be scorch
While they were thus discoursing, some flax,
fire at the end of a long cane, at some distance,
to warm their faces. Sancho, feeling the heat,
May I be hanged if we are not already at that
fire-place, or very near it; for it has singed a
part of my beard; and, sir, I am just going to
out, and see whereabouts we are. By no mean
swered Don Quixote; remember the true story
licentiate Torralva, whom the devils carried th
the air riding on a cane with his eyes shut;
twelve hours he arrived at Rome, and alighted
tower of Nona, which is a street of that city, an
all the tumult, assault, and death of the constab
Bourbon; and the next morning he returned t
drid, where he gave an account of all he had see
said likewise, that, during his passage through th
the devil bid him open his eyes; and so he did
found himself to his thinking so near the body
moon, that he could have laid hold of it with his
and that he durst not look down towards the ear
fear of being giddy. So that, Sancho, we mus
uncover our faces; for he, who has taken upon
the charge of us, will give an account of us; an
haps we are now making a point, and soaring alof
certain height, to come sowse down upon the kin
of Candaya, like a hawk upon a heron. And t
to us it does not seem more than half an hour sin
left the garden, believe me, we must have made a
deal of way. I know nothing as to that, ans
Sancho Panza; I can only say, that, if madam M
lanes or Magalona was contented to ride upo
crupper, her flesh must not have been of the te
All this discourse of the two heroes was o

emained in the garden, ...
t upon the ground. Don Quixote and Sancho
), in but indifferent plight, and looking about them
sides, were amazed to find themselves in the
garden, from whence they set out, and to see such
nber of folks stretched upon the ground. But
wonder was increased, when, on one side of the
n, they perceived a great lance, sticking in the
, and a smooth piece of white parchment hanging,
by two green silken strings; upon which was
en, in large letters of gold, what follows:—

The renowned knight Don Quixote de la Mancha
inished and achieved the adventure of the Coun-
Trifaldi, otherwise called the Afflicted Matron,
company, only by attempting it. Malambruno is
ely satisfied, and desires no more; the chins of the
nas are smooth and clean, and Don Clavijo and
monasia have recovered their pristine estate: and
n the squirely whipping shall be accomplished, the
e dove shall be delivered from the cruel pounces
he hawks that pursue her, and shall find herself in
arms of her beloved turtle: for so it is ordained by
sage Merlin, the prince of enchanters."
on Quixote, having read the inscription on the
... that it spoke of the

ked up and down for the Afflicted, to see
of face she had now she was beardless, and
s was as handsome without it, as her gallant
emed to promise: but he was told, that as
came flaming down through the air, and
on the ground, the whole squadron of du-
the Trifaldi, disappeared, and their beards
oots and all.

ness inquired of Sancho, how it fared with
long voyage? To which Sancho answered:
, madam, as my master told me, that we
ig by the region of fire, and I had a mighty
eep a little; and, though my master, whose
ed, would not consent to it, I, who have I
hat spice of curiosity, and a desire of know-
forbidden and denied me, softly, and with-
erceived by any body, shoved up the hand-
ear my nostrils, and thence looked down to-
earth; and methought it was no bigger than
nustard-seed, and the men that walked upon
gger than hazel-nuts: judge you, madam,
we must have been then. To this, quoth
s: Take care, friend Sancho, what you say:
in you saw not the earth, but the men only

... then, what do I? why
saying a word to any body, not even to my m
and softly, I slipped down from Clavileno, ar
with those she-goats, which are like so man
about the space of three quarters of an hour
the while Clavileno moved not from the place
red a foot.* And while honest Sancho was
himself with the goats, quoth the duke, how d
Don Quixote amuse himself? To which Don
answered: As these and the like accidents ar
the order of nature, no wonder Sancho says
does: for my own part I can say, I neither lo
nor down, and saw neither heaven nor earth,
nor sands: it is very true, I was sensible that
through the region of the air, and even touch
that of fire; but that we passed beyond, I can
lieve: for the fiery region being between the sp
the moon and the utmost region of the air, we co
reach that heaven, where the seven goats,
speaks of, are, without being burned; and, si
were not burned, either Sancho lies, or
dreams. I neither lie, nor dream, answered S
do but ask me the marks of those same goats,
them you may guess whether I speak the truth
Tell us then, Sancho, quoth the duchess
replied Sancho

same, quoth the duke: in our region of the earth
.ve no such colours; I mean, goats of such col-
The reason is plain, quoth Sancho: there must
ifference between the goats of heaven, and those
th. Pr'ythee, Sancho, said the duke, was there
. he-goat* among them? No, sir, answered San-
for, they told me, none pass beyond the horns of
oon. They would not ask Sancho any more
ons about his journey, perceiving he was in a
ır of rambling all over the heavens, and giving an
nt of what passed there, without stirring from
.rden.†
ine, this was the conclusion of the adventure of
fflicted Matron, which furnished the duke and
ss with matter of laughter, not only at that time,
r their whole lives, and Sancho something to re-
r ages, had he lived so long: and Don Quixote,
g to Sancho, whispered him in the ear, saying:
o, since you would have us believe all you have
n heaven, I expect you should believe what I saw
ntesinos' cave;—I say no more.

Cabron;" a jest on the double meaning of that
which signifies both a he-goat and a cuckold.
o, by his answer, seems to take, or hit by chance
jest.

ıis supposed journey of Don Quixote and San-
ı Clavileno, seems to allude to Agesilan (in Am-
ı Gaul, b. 12, ch. 94,) who steers his flying horse
aleon so near to the north pole, that he cannot
ı the excessive cold: whereupon he tacks about
rard, and passes the straits of Gibralter, and the
ı of Libya, Egypt, &c. Sancho's relation of
he saw in the heavens may be a ridicule on the
ıters Zirfee, Urganda, and Alquife, taking a
the sky, to see the wonders of the zodiac.—*Ib.*
h. 59.

... projected the scheme and g
the necessary orders to their servants and vassals,
they were to behave to Sancho in his governmen
the promised island, the day following Clavile
flight, the duke bid Sancho prepare, and get him
in readiness to go to be a governor; for his islan
already wished for him, as for rain in May. San
made his bow, and said: Ever since my descent f
heaven, and since from its lofty summit I beheld
earth, and observed it to be so small, the great de
I had of being a governor is, in part cooled; for w
grandeur is it to command on a grain of mustard-se
or what dignity or dominion is there in governing l
a dozen men no bigger than hazel-nuts, for methou
the whole earth was nothing more?* If your lords
would be pleased to give me but some small portion
heaven, though it were no more than half a leagu
would accept it with a better will, than the bigg
island in the world. Look you, friend Sancho,
swered the duke, I can give away no part of heav
though no bigger than one's nail; for God has reserv
the disposal of those favours and graces in his pow
But what I can give you, I give you, and that is
island ready made, round and sound, and well prop
tioned, and above measure fruitful and abunda

covetousness, that I forsake my humble cot-
d aspire to greater things, but for the desire I
o taste how it relishes to be a governor. If once
aste it, Sancho, quoth the duke, you will eat your
rs after it, so very sweet a thing it is to command,
d be obeyed. Sure I am, when your master comes
be an emperor (for doubtless he will be one, in the
way his affairs are) no one will be able to wrest it from
him, and it will grieve and vex him to the heart, to
have been so long a time without being one. Sir, re-
plied Sancho, I am of opinion, it is good to command,
though it be but a flock of sheep. Let me be buried
with you, Sancho, for you know something of every
thing, answered the duke; and I doubt not, you will
prove such a governor, as your wit seems to promise.
Let this suffice for the present; and take notice, that,
to-morrow, without fail, you shall depart for the gov-
ernment of the island, and this evening you shall be
fitted with a convenient garb, and with all things ne-
cessary for your departure. Let them dress me, quoth
Sancho, how they will; for, howsoever I go clad, I
shall still be Sancho Panza. That is true, said the
duke; but our dress must be suitable to the employ-
ment or dignity we are in: for it would be prepos-
terous for a lawyer to be habited like a soldier, or a sol-
dier like a priest. You, Sancho, must go dressed partly
like a scholar, and partly like a captain: for in the
island I give you, arms are as necessary as letters, and
letters as arms. Letters, answered Sancho, I know
but little of; for I can scarcely say the A, B, C; but it
is sufficient to have the Christus* to be a good gover-
nor: and, as to arms, I shall handle such as are given
me till I fall, and God be my guide. With so good a
memory, quoth the duke, Sancho can never err.

By this time Don Quixote came up, and learning
what had passed, and how suddenly Sancho was to
depart to his government, with the duke's leave, he
took him by the hand, and carried him with him to
his chamber purposing to give him advice how to be-
in his employment. Being come into
, he shut the door after him, and almost

ut at the beginning of the A, B, C
led the Christ-cross-row.

in full possession of your wishes. Ot
portune, solicit, attend early, pray, persi
not obtain what they aim at: another co
out knowing how or which way, carries
ment or office against all other pretende
makes good the saying: 'In pretension
You, who, in respect to me, without dot
head, without rising early, or sitting up
out taking any pains at all, by the air a
errantry breathing on you, see yourself,
ado, governor of an island, as if it we
nothing. All this I say, O Sancho, th
ascribe the favour done you to your o
give thanks, first to heaven, which dis
sweetly, and in the next place, to the g
rent in the profession of knight-errantr
heart being disposed to believe what I h
ing, be attentive, son, to me your Cat
your counsellor, your north star and gui
and steer you safe into port, out of tha
sea, wherein you are going to be engul
fices and great employments are nothi
profound gulph of confusions.

...ock's ugly feet.* True, answered San... I was a boy, I kept swine; but afterward... grew towards man, I looked after geese, and... hogs. But this, methinks, is nothing to th... for all governors are not descended from th... kings. Granted, replied Don Quixote; and... those, who are not of noble descent, should... ny the gravity of the office they bear with a... geatle sweetness, which, guided by prudence,... them from that ill-natured murmuring, which... of life can well escape.

Value yourself, Sancho, upon the meanness... family, and be not ashamed to own you descen... peasants; for when people see, that you yourse... not ashamed, nobody else will endeavour to mak... so; and think it greater merit to be a virtuous... man, than a proud sinner; infinite is the numbe... those, who, born of low extraction, have risen to... highest dignities, both papal and imperial; and of... truth I could produce examples enough to tire you.

Look you, Sancho, if you take virtue for a mean, a... alue yourself upon doing virtuous actions, you ne... t envy lords and princes; for blood is inherited, bu... rtue acquired; and virtue has an intrinsic worth... ich blood has not.

This being so, as it really is, if ...
r kindred comes to ...
nd, do ...

, and [illegible]
no reckoning of in his life.
governed by the law of your own will; which
o bear much sway with the ignorant, who pre-
n being discerning.
e tears of the poor find more compassion, but
justice, from you, than the informations of

vour to sift out the truth amidst the presents
nises of the rich, as well among the sighs and
nities of the poor.
equity can, and ought to take place, lay not
le rigour of the law upon the delinquent; for
itation of the rigorous judge is not better than
the compassionate one.
rchance the rod of justice be warped a little,
ot be by the weight of a gift, but that of mercy.
happens, that the cause of your enemy comes
you, fix not your mind upon the injury done you,
the merits of the case.
no private affection blind you in another man's
for the errors you shall commit thereby are
without remedy, and if there should be one, it
e at the expense both of your reputation and for-

[illegible] comes to demand justice, turn

n you are to punish with deeds, do not ev
with words; for the pain of the punishme
ough for the wretch to bear, without the additi
language.

In the criminal, who falls under your jurisdi
consider the miserable man, subject to the con
of our depraved nature; and, as much as in you
without injuring the contrary party, shew pity
clemency; for, though the attributes of God a
equal, that of his mercy is more pleasing and attra
in our eyes, than that of his justice.

If, Sancho, you observe these precepts and
rules, your days will be long, and your fame et
your recompence full, and your felicity unspeak
You shall match your children as you please;
and your grand-children, shall inherit titles;
shall live in peace, and in favour with all men
at the end of your life, death shall find you in a
and mature old age, and your eyes shall be clos
the tender and pious hands of your grand-child
children.

What I have hitherto taught you, Sancho, are
ments for the adorning your mind: listen now to
which concern the adornments of the body.

CHAP. XI.

Of the second instructions Don Quixote gave Sa Panza.

Who that had heard the foregoing discours
Don Quixote's, but would have taken him for a
pent and intelligent person? But, as it has bee
ten said in the progress of this grand history, he t
foolishly only when chivalry was the subject, a
the rest of his conversation shewed himself maste
clear and agreeable understanding; insomuch tha
actions perpetually bewrayed his judgment, an
judgment his actions. But, in these second ins
tions given to Sancho, he shewed a great deal of
antry, and pushed his discretion and his madne
high pitch.

Sancho listened to him most attentively, en
ing to preserve his instructions in memory,

that excrement and excrescence were a hai
it is rather the talon of a lizard-hunting
swinish and monstrous abuse!

Go not loose and unbuttoned, Sancho;
enly dress betokens a careless mind, unle
composure and negligence fall under the
cunning and design, as was judged to be t
Julius Cæsar.

Feel, with discretion, the pulse of what
may be worth, and, if it will afford your giv
to your servants, give them such as are
useful, rather than showy and modish: and
tween your servants and the poor; I mean,
keep six pages, clothe but three, and three c
and thus you will have pages for heaven ar
too; a new way of giving liveries, which th
rious never thought of.

Eat neither garlic nor onion, lest people
the smell, at your peasantry. Walk leisurely
deliberately; but not as to seem to be tea
yourself; for all affectation is bad.

Eat little at dinner, and less at suppe
health of the whole body is tempered in t
the stomach.

Be temperate in drinking, considering t

language,* over which the vulgar and custo
way. In truth, sir, quoth Sancho, one of t
sels and instructions, I intend to carry in m
nory, shall be this, of not belching; for I am wo
do it very frequently. Eructing, Sancho, and n
elching, quoth Don Quixote. Eructing it shall b
henceforward, and, in faith, I will not forget it.

Likewise, Sancho, intermix not in your discour
that multitude of proverbs you are wont: for, thoug
proverbs are short sentences, you often drag them
so by the head and shoulders, that they seem rath
cross purposes, than sentences. God alone can remed
that, quoth Sancho; for I know more proverbs th
will fill a book, and, when I talk, they crowd so thic
into my mouth, that they jostle which shall get o
first: but my tongue tosses out the first it meets, thoug
it be not always very pat. But, for the future, I wi
take heed to utter such as become the gravity of m
place: for, In a plentiful house supper is soon dressed
and, He that cuts does not deal; and, He that has t
repique is safe; and, To spend and to spare, requi
judgment. So, so, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote; thru
in, rank, and string on your proverbs, nobody is goi
about to hinder you. My mother whips me, and I te
on. I am warning you to abstain from proverbs, a
in an instant you pour forth a litany of them, whic
square with what we are upon as much as, Over t
hills and far away.† Look you, Sancho, I do not s
a proverb is amiss, when skilfully applied; but to a
cumulate, and string them at random, renders a di
course flat and low.

---

* Here our author justifies the introducing expres
ive words out of one language into another, agreeab
to Horace's

"Et nova factaque nuper habebunt verba fidem, si
Græco fonte cadant, parce detorta."

Ars. Poet. l. 52.

What he says of the force of custom is borrowed fro
the same poet's

"Si volet usus,
Quem penes arbitrium est, et jus et norma loquen
Ibid. l."

† *In the original*, "By the rocks of Ubeda."
the beginning of an old song.

and sloth her opposite never reached the e
wish.

The last article of advice I shall at th
you, though it concerns not the adorning c
yet I would have you bear it carefully in
believe it will be of no less service to you
have already given you. It is this: Never
to decide contests about families, at least b
them, since perforce one must have the
and he who is postponed will hate you, and
preferred will not reward you.

Your habit shall be breeches and stock
coat,* and a cloak † somewhat longer; bu
sers ‡ or trunk-hose, think not of them;
not becoming either to cavaliers or govern

This is all that occurs to me at present
advice to you: as time goes on, and acco
occasions, such shall my instructions be, p
take care to inform me of the state of your
answered Sancho, I see very well, that a
ship has been saying is good, holy, and pro
what good will it do me, if I remember no
It is true, I shall not forget what you hav
not letting my nails grow, and about ma
if I may; but for your other gallimaufries

that he was so untoward and perverse, that
uld be beaten into him. It is a very great
:arry with you, and therefore I would by all
you learn to write your name, if possible.
ny name very well, answered Sancho; for
steward of the brotherhood in our village,
make certain characters, like the marks
l pack, which, I was told spelt my name:
vorst, I can pretend my right hand is lame,
nother sign for me: for there is a remedy
ing but death; and I, having the command
will do what I please. Besides, he whose
ayor, &c. you know,* and I, being a gov-
surely something more than mayor. Let
and play at bo-peep. Ay, ay, let them
ackbite me: they may come for wool and
k shorn; and whom God loves, his house
ury to him; and, The rich man's blunders
xims in the world; and I, being a governor,
uently rich and bountiful to boot, as I intend
dy will see my defects. No, no, Get your-
and clowns will have flies. As much as you
ich you are worth, said my grannam; and,

For my own part,
ly, I sweat and labour as if I were
Before God, master of mine, repli
worship complains of very trifles. V
you angry, that I make use of my c
have no other, nor any stock, but pr
erbs: and just now I have four th
selves pat to the purpose, and sit li
nier:* but I will not produce them; f
well is called Sancho.† That you wi
cho, quoth Don Quixote; for you are
ing silence well, that you are an er
and an eternal babbler. But, for all
know what four proverbs occurred t
pat to the purpose; for I have been
own memory, which is a pretty g
think of none. Can there be bett
than, Never venture your fingers
teeth; and, To get out of my hou
have with my wife? There is no
the pitcher hits the stone, or the st
it is bad for the pitcher: all whic
no one contest with his govern
substitutes; for he will come of
who claps his finger betwee

one and the pitcher, a blind man may see in
o that he, who sees a mote in another man's
ould first look to the beam in his own; that it
ot be said of him, The dead woman was afraid c
at was flayed: and your worship knows well,
he fool knows more in his own house, than the
another man's. Not so, Sancho, answered
uixote: the fool knows nothing either in his
ouse or another's; for knowledge is not a structur
e erected upon so shallow a foundation as folly.
much for that, Sancho; for if you govern ill, yo
ill be the fault, but the shame will be mine. Bu
mfort myself, that I have done my duty in advisi
u as seriously and as discreetly as I possibly coul
d so I am acquitted both of my obligation and n
mise. God speed you, Sancho, and govern you
ir government, and deliver me from a suspicion
e, that you will turn the whole island topsy-turvy
ch I might prevent, by letting the duke know wha
are, and telling him, that all that paunch-gut an
e carcase of thine is nothing but a sackful of prov
and sly remarks. Sir, replied Sancho, if you
hip thinks I am not fit for this government, I re
ce it from this moment; for I love the little blac
nail of my soul better than my whole body, an
Sancho can live as well upon bread and onion
vernor Sancho upon capon and partridge. Be
while we are asleep, the great and the smal
or and the rich, are all equal. And if your wor
eflects, you will find, it was your worship tha
upon the scent of governing: for
f the government of

CHAP. XII.

Sancho Panza was carried to his government, d of the strange adventure which befel Don uixote in the castle.

WE are told, that in the original of this history, it is d, Cid Hamete coming to write this chapter, the erpreter did not translate it, as he had written it: nich was a kind of complaint the Moor made of himlf, for having undertaken a history so dry, and so onfined, as that of Don Quixote, thinking he must be lways talking of him and Sancho, without daring to launch into digressions and episodes of more weight and entertainment. And he said, that to have his invention, his hand, and his pen, always tied down to write upon one subject only, and to speak by the mouths of few characters, was an insupportable toil, and of no advantage to the author; and that, to avoid this inconvenience, he had, in the first part, made use of the artifice of introducing novels, such as that of the "Curious Impertinent," and that of the "Captive;" which are in a manner detached from the history; though most of what is related in that part are accidents which happened to Don Quixote himself, and could not be omitted. He also thought, as he tells us, that many readers, carried away by their attention to Don Quixote's exploits, could afford none to the novels, and would either run them over in haste, or with disgust, not considering how fine and artificial they were in themselves, as would have been very evident, had they been published separately, without being tacked to the extravagances of Don Quixote, and the simplicities of Sancho. And therefore, in this second part, he would introduce no loose nor unconnected novels; but only some episodes, resembling them, and such as flow naturally from such events as the truth offers; and even these, with great limitation, and in no more words than are sufficient to express them: and, since he restrains and confines himself within the narrow limits of the narration, though with ability, genius, *and understanding,* sufficient to treat of the whole uni *verse, he desires his pains* may not be undervalued, bu

writ and n he
y, saying :—
Quixote, in the evening of the day he g
structions to Sancho, gave them him in writi
e might get somebody to read them to hi
carcely had he delivered them to Sancho, wl
ropped them, and they fell into the duke's
who communicated them to the duchess; and
oth admired afresh at the madness and capaci
Don Quixote; and so, going on with their jest,
vening they dispatched Sancho, with a large re
o the place, which, to him, was to be an island.
erson who had the management of the business,
steward of the duke's, a person of pleasantry
iscretion (for there can be no true pleasantry with
iscretion) and who had already personated the co
ss Trifaldi, with the humour already related; a
ith these qualifications, and the instructions of
rd and lady how to behave to Sancho, he perform
part to admiration. Now it fell out, that Sanc
sooner cast his eyes on this same steward, but
cied he saw in his face the very features of the T
; and, turning to his master, he said: Sir, eith
devil shall run away with me from the place whe
nd for an honest man and a believer, or your wo
shall confess to me, that the countenance of th
steward of the duke's is the very same with th
e Afflicted. Don Quixote beheld him attentivel
having viewed him, said to Sancho: There is
of the devil's running away with
as an honest man

:. Sancho turned back his [illegible]
n to look at his ass, with whose company he w
ighted, that he would not have changed compa
th the emperor of Germany.

At taking leave of the duke and duchess, he l
eir hands, and begged his master's blessing, w
gave with tears, and Sancho received blubb
ow, loving reader, let honest Sancho depa
ace, and in a good hour, and expect two bush
ughter from the accounts how he demeaned him
s employment; and, in the mean time, atte
hat befel his master that night; which, if it do
ake you laugh, you will at least open your lip
e grin of a monkey; for the adventures o
uixote must be celebrated either with admira
ughter.

It is related then, that scarcely was Sanc
arted, when Don Quixote began to regret h
olitary condition, and, had it been possible for
ave recalled the commission, and taken the
nent from him, he certainly would have d
The duchess soon perceived his melancho
sked him why he was so sad: if for the abse
Sancho, there were squires, duennas, and
[illegible] ready to serve him to his

wait, that I alone may wait upon m
amber.* Truly, Signor Don Quixote
uchess, it must not be so; but you sha
by four of my damsels, all beautiful as
me, answered Don Quixote, they will not
but very thorns, pricking me to the soul
no more come into my chamber, nor
like it, than they shall fly. If your gra
continue your favours to me, without n
them, suffer me to be alone, and let me
within my own doors, that I may keep a
my passions and my modesty; a practice
not forego for all your highness's libera
me. In short, I will sooner lie in my c
consent to let any body help to undress m
enough, signor Don Quixote, replied the
promise you, I will give orders that not
fly shall enter your chamber, much less
would by no means be accessary to the
Signor Don Quixote's decency; for, by
perceive, the most conspicuous of his ma
his modesty. Your worship, sir, may undr
by yourself your own way, when and how
for nobody shall hinder you; and in y
you will find all the necessary utensils;
may sleep with the doors locked, and no
need oblige you to open them. A thous
the grand Dulcinea del Toboso, and be
tended over the whole globe of the earth,
the love of so valiant and so chaste a knig
indulgent heaven infuse into the heart of
as our governor, a disposition to finish
speedily, that the world may again enjoy t
so great a lady. To which Don Quixote
highness has spoken like yourself, and fro
of such good ladies nothing that is bad
and Dulcinea will be more happy, and m

* Don Quixote's concern for the depar
cho is not unlike that of Amadis, who,
his squire Gandalin the Firm Island, ma
speech to him at parting, and retires t
night, there to bewail his condition.

Amadis de Gau

d, by the praises your grandeur bestows on her. those of the most eloquent on earth. Signor uixote, replied the duchess, the hour of supper near, and the duke may be staying for us: Come, us sup, and to bed betimes; for your yester- journey from Candaya was not so short, but it have somewhat fatigued you. Not at all, madam, ered Don Quixote; for I can safely swear to your llency, that in all my life I never bestrid a soberer t, nor of an easier pace, than Clavileno; and I can- imagine what possessed Malambruno to part with swift and so gentle a steed, and burn him so, with- t more ado. We may suppose, answered the duch- s, that, repenting of the mischief he had done to the rifaldi, and her companions, and to other persons, and f the iniquities he had committed as a wizard and an nchanter, he had a mind to destroy all the instru- ments of his art, and as the principal, and that which gave him the most disquiet, by having carried him up and down from country to country, he burnt Clavi- leno; and thus, with his ashes, and the trophy of the parchment, has eterhalized the valour of the grand Don Quixote de la Mancha. Don Quixote gave thanks afresh to the duchess, and, when he had supped, he retired to his chamber alone, not consenting to let any body come in to wait upon him; so afraid was he of meeting with temptations to move or force him to transgress that mod- est decency he had preserved towards his lady Dulcinea, bearing always in mind the chastity of Amadis, the flow- er and mirror of knights-errant. He shut his door after him, and by the light of two wax candles, pulled off his clothes; and at stripping off his stockings (O mishap un- worthy of such a personage!) forth burst, not sighs, nor any thing else that might discredit his cleanliness, but some two dozen stitches of a stocking, which made it resemble a lattice-window. The good gentleman was extremely afflicted, and, would have given an ounce of silver to have had there a drachm of green silk; I say, green, because his stockings were green.

Here Ben Engeli exclaims, and, writing on, says: O poverty, poverty! I cannot imagine what moved the great Cordovan poet to call thee "a holy, thankless *gift." I, though a Moor,* know very well, by the inter *course I have had with* the Christians, that holiness

onsists in charity, humility, faith, obedience,
rty. But for all that, I say, a man must have
hare of the grace of God, who can bring hims
ontented with poverty, unless it be that kind c
which one of their greatest saints speaks, i
' possess all things as not possessing them." A.
s called poverty in spirit. But thou, O second
y (which is that I am speaking of) why doest
choose to pinch gentlemen, and such as are well
rather than other people? Why dost thou force
to cobble their shoes, and to wear one button of
coats of silk, one of hair, and one of glass? Why
their ruffs be, for the most part, ill ironed, and w
starched?——By this you may see the antiquity of
se of ruffs and starch. Then he goes on——Wret
d, well-born gentleman! who is administering je
reths to his honour, while he is starving his carca
ing with his door locked upon him, and making
pocrite of his tooth-pick, with which he walks c
o the street, after having eaten nothing to obli
to this cleanliness. Wretched he, I say, whc
tish honour is always ready to start, apprehensi
every body sees, a league off, the patch upon
, the sweating through of his hat, the thread ba
of his cloak, and the hunger of his stomach.
these melancholy reflections recurred to D
te's thoughts upon the rent in his stocking:* l
mfort was, that Sancho had left him behind a p
velling boots, which he resolved to put on n
Finally he laid himself down, pensive and hea
l, as well for lack of Sancho, as for the i—
sfortune of his stocking.

ose she should sleep, ...
still be in vain, if this new Æneas, who is arrived
y territories to leave me forlorn, sleeps on, and
ses not to hear it. Do not fancy so, dear Altisido-
nswered the other; for doubtless the duchess, and
y body else in the house, is asleep, excepting the
ter of your heart, and disturber of your repose: for
ı now I heard him open his casement, and, without
bt, he must be awake. Sing, my afflicted creature,
low and sweet voice, to the sound of your harp;
, if the duchess should hear us, we will plead the
essive heat of the weather. This is not the point,
Emerencia, answered Altisidora, but that I am afraid
song should betray my heart, and so I might be tak-
for a light longing hussey by those, who are unac-
inted with the powerful effects of love. But come
at will; better a blush in the face, than a blot in the
ırt. And presently she began to touch a harp most
eetly. Which Don Quixote hearing, he was surpris-
; and, in that instant, came into his mind an infinite
mber of adventures of the like kind, of casements,
ıtes, and gardens, serenades, courtships, and faint-
ıs away, of which he had read in his idle books of
ivalry. He straight imagined, that some damsel of
duchess's was fallen in love with him, and that

SONG.

Gentle knight, La Mancha's glory,
Famed in never dying story;
Of a purer, finer, mould,
Than Arabia's finest gold:
Thou that, in thy downy bed,
Wrapt in Holland sheets, art laid,
And with out-stretch'd legs art yawning
Or, asleep till morrow's dawning;—
Hear a woeful maid complaining,
Who must die by thy disdaining,
Since thy eyes have scorch'd her soul
And have burnt it to a coal,
If the aim of thy adventures
In relieving damsels centres,
Canst thou wound a tender maid,
And refuse thy wonted aid?
Tell, O tell me, I conjure thee,
So may heav'nly help secure thee,
Wert thou born where lions roar
On remotest Afric's shore?
Wert thou some bleak mountain's care,
And did'st suck, thy nurse, a bear?
Fair Dulcinny, tall and slender,
Well may boast thy heart's surrender,
Since those charms must stand confest,
That could tame a tiger's breast:
And henceforth she shall be known
From the Tagus to the Rhone.
Could I take Dulcinny's place,
And but swap with hers my face,
O! I'd give my Sunday's suit,
And fring'd petticoat to boot.
Happy she that, in those arms
Clasp'd, enjoys thy manly charms,
Or but, sitting by thy bed,
Chafes thy feet, or rubs thy head!
Ah! I wish and ask too much:
Let me but thy great toe touch;
'Twere to humble me a blessing,
And reward beyond expressing.
Oh! how I would lavish riches,
Satin vests and damask breeches,

And the [illegible]
Here for finish'd beauty goes.
How I sing, I need not say,
If perchance thou hear'st this lay :—
These, and twenty graces more-a
Court thee to Altisidora.

ended the song of the sore-wounded A.tisidora,
an the alarm of the courted Don Quixote, who,
g a deep sigh, said within himself : Why am I
ppy a knight-errant, that no damsel can see me
: must presently fall in love with me ? Why is
erless Dulcinea so unlucky, that she must not be
d singly to enjoy this my incomparable constan-
Queens, what would ye have with her ? Em-
s, why do ye persecute her ? Damsels from four-
o fifteen, why do ye plague her ? Leave, leave
or creature ; let her triumph, glory, and plume
f in the lot, which love bestowed upon her in the
est of my heart, and the surrender of my soul.
notice, enamoured multitude, that to Dulcinea
I am paste and sugar, and to all others flint : to
am honey, and to the rest of ye aloes. To me,
inea alone is beautiful, discreet, lively, modest,
well-born ; and the rest of the sex, foul, foolish,
[illegible] and hers alone, na-

befallen him, threw himself upon his bed; where present, we will leave him, to attend the great San Panza, who is desirous of beginning his famous g ernment.

CHAP. XIII.

How the great Sancho Panza took possession of island, and of the manner of his beginning to g ern it.

O THOU perpetual discoveror of the antipodes, to of the world, eye of heaven, sweet motive of wi cooling bottles;* here Thymbræus, there Phœb here archer, there physician; father of poesy, inve of music; thou who always risest, and, though t seemest to do so, never settest! To thee I speai sun, by whose assistance man begets man; thee I voke to favour and enlighten the obscurity of my g ius, that I may be able punctually to describe the g ernment of the great Sancho Panza; for without t I find myself indolent, dispirited, and confused!

I say then, that Sancho, with all his attenda arrived at a town that contained about a thous inhabitants, and was one of the best the duke I They gave him to understand, that it was called island of Barataria, either because Barataria really the name of the place, or because he obtai the government of it at so cheap a rate.† At his rival near the gates of the town, which was wal about, the magistrates, in their formalities, came to receive him, the bells rung, and the people gave monstrations of a general joy, and, with a great of pomp, conducted him to the great church to g thanks to God. Presently after, with certain ridi

* "Cantimplora;" a sort of bottle for keeping w cool, with a very long neck, and very broad and below, that the ice may lie conveniently upon i the pail, and a broad cork fitted to the pail, wit hole in the middle to let the neck of the bo through.

† "*Barato,*" *in Spanish*, signifies cheap.

[illegible] steward said to him:
ancient custom here, my lord governor, that
comes to take possession of this famous island
ed to answer to a question put to him, which
somewhat intricate and difficult; and, by his
the people are enabled to feel the pulse of t
governor's understanding, and accordingly, a
glad or sorry for his coming.

While the steward was saying this, San
staring at some capital letters written on the
posite to his chair, and, because he could not
asked what that painting was on the wall.
answered, Sir, it is there written, on what d
honour took possession of this island; and the
tion runs thus: This day (such a day of the mo
year) Signor Don Sancho Panza took possessio
island, and long may he enjoy it. And, pray, q
who is it they call Don Sancho Panza? You
ship, answered the steward; for no other Pan
sides him now in the chair, ever came into this
Take notice, brother, quoth Sancho, Don does
long to me, nor ever did to any of my family: I a
ed plain Sancho Panza; my father was a Sanc
my grandfather a Sancho, and they were all l
without any addition of Dons or Donnas; and
there

clad like a country fellow, and the other like a
or, with a pair of shears in his hand; and the tailor
: My lord governor, I and this countryman, come
ore your worship, by reason this honest man came
erday to my shop (for, saving your presence, I am
ailor, and have passed my examination, God be
aked) and, putting a piece of cloth into my hands,
ed me: Sir, is there enough of this to make me a
? I, measuring the piece, answered, Yes. Now
magining, as I imagine (and I imagined right) that
btless I had a mind to cabbage some of the cloth,
inding his conceit on his own knavery, and upon
common ill opinion had of tailors, bid me view it
in, and see if there was not enough for two. I
ssed his drift, and told him there was. My gentle-
, persisting in his knavish intention, went on in-
asing the number of caps, and I adding to the
aber of Yes's, till we came to five caps; and even
he came for them. I offered them to him, and he
ises to pay me for the making, and pretends I shall
er return him his cloth, or pay him for it. Is all
so, brother? demanded Sancho. Yes, answered
man: but pray, my lord, make him produce the
caps he has made me. With all my heart, an-
wered the tailor, and pulling his hand from under
cloak, he showed the five caps on the ends of his
ers and thumb, saying: Here are the five caps this
est man would have me make; and, on my soul and
science, not a shred of the cloth is left, and I sub-
the work to be viewed by any inspectors of the
le. All that were present laughed at the number
he caps, and the novelty of the suit. Sancho set
self to consider a little, and said: I am of opinion,
re needs no great delay in this suit, and it may be
ided very equitably off hand; and therefore I pro-
nce, that the tailor lose the making, and the coun-
nan the stuff, and that the caps be confiscated to
use of the poor; and there is an end of that. If
sentence he afterwards passed on the purse of the
dsman caused the admiration of all the by-standers,
excited their laughter. In short, what the gov-
or commanded was executed.

he next that presented themselves before him were
ancient men, the one with a cane in his hand f

debt, and say,

did, that he has already paid me: and I having no
nesses of the loan, or he of the payment, I entreat
ur worship will take his oath; and, if he will swear
has returned me the money, I acquit him from this
nute before God and the world. What say you to
s, old gentleman with the staff? quoth Sancho.
which the old fellow replied: I confess, my lord,
did lend me the money; and if your worship pleas-
to hold down your wand of justice, since he leaves
to my oath, I will swear I have really and truly re-
rned it him. The governor held down the wand, and
e old fellow gave the staff to his creditor to hold,
hile he was swearing, as if it encumbered him: and
esently laid his hand upon the cross of the wand, and
id, it was true indeed, he had lent him those ten
owns he asked for; but that he had restored them to
m into his own hand; and because, he supposed, he had
rgot it, he was every moment asking him for them.
Which the great governor seeing, he asked the creditor,
hat he had to answer to what his antagonist had alledg-
l. He replied, he did not doubt but his debtor had said
e truth; for he took him to be an honest man,
d a good Christian; and that he himself must have
rgot, when, and where, the money was returned; and
he would never ask him for

ack accordingly, and Sancho, seeing him, saic
me that staff, honest friend; for I have occasio
With all my heart, answered the old fellow; ar
ered it into his hand. Sancho took it, and givi
the other old man, said: Go about your busi
God's name, for you are paid. I, my lord, answ
old man; what! is this cane worth ten golden c
Yes, quoth the governor, or I am the greatest d
the world; and now it shall appear whether I
head to govern a whole kingdom. Straight I
manded the cane to be broken before them all.
being done, there were found in the hollow c
crowns in gold. All were struck with admirat
took their new governor for a second Solomon.
asked him, whence he had collected, that
crowns were in the cane. He answered, th
seeing the old man give it his adversary, while
taking the oath, and swearing that he had re
truly restored them into his own hands, and, v
had done, ask for it again, it came into his imag
the money in dispute must be in the hollow of t
Whence it may be gathered, that, God Almigh
directs the judgment of those who govern, thoı
erwise mere blockheads: besides, he had he
priest of his parish tell a like case; and, were
that he was so unlucky as to forget all he hac
to remember, his memory was so good, there w
have been a better in the whole island. At
both the old men marched off, the one ashan
the other satisfied: the by-standers were su
and the secretary, who minuted down the wo
tions, and behaviour of Sancho Panza, could nc
mine with himself, whether he should set hir
for a wise man or a fool.

This cause was no sooner ended, but ther
into court a woman, keeping fast hold of a m
like a rich herdsman. She came crying aloud:
my lord governor, justice; if I cannot find it o
I will seek it in heaven: lord governor of n
this wicked man surprised me in the middle of
and made use of my body as if it had been a di
and, woe is me, has robbed me of what I
above these three and twenty years, def
against Moors and Christians, natives and

this morning I went out of this town, after having
(under correction be it spoken) four hogs, and,
it between dues and exactions, the officers took
a me little less than they were worth. I was re-
ning home, and by the way I lighted upon this good
ne, and the devil, the author of all mischief, yoked
ogether. I paid her handsomely; but she not con-
ted, laid hold on me, and has never let me go till
has dragged me to this place: she says I forced
; but, by the oath I have taken, or am to take, she
: and this is the whole truth. Then the governor
ed him if he had any silver money about him. He
l, Yes, he had about twenty ducats in a leathern
se in his bosom. He ordered him to produce it,
deliver it just as it was to the plaintiff. He did so,
nbling. The woman took it, and, making a thou-
d courtesies, after the Moorish manner, and praying
God for the life and health of the lord governor, who
k such care of poor orphans and maidens, out of the
rt she went, holding the purse with both hands;
first she looked to see if the money that was in it
s silver. She was scarcely gone out, when Sancho
l to the herdsman, who was in tears, and whose eyes
l heart were gone after his purse: Honest man, fol-
that woman, and take away the purse from her

my lord governor, the impudence and want of fear his varlet, who, in the midst of the town, and of treet, would take from me the purse your worship nanded to be given me. And has he got it? de- ed the governor. Got it? answered the woman, ld sooner let him take away my life than my ust claw my beard, and not such pitiful, sneaking pincers and hammers, crows and chisels, shall it out of my clutches, nor even the paws of a y soul and body shall sooner part. She is in t, quoth the man, and I yield myself worsted it, and confess I have not strength enough to om her; and so he left her. Then, said the to the woman: Give me that purse, virtuous She presently delivered it, and the governor it to the man, and said to the forceful, but not nsel: Sister of mine, had you shewn the ut half as much courage and resolution in your chastity as you have done in defending the strength of Hercules could not have Begone, in God's name, and in an ill e not found in all this island, nor in six nd about it, upon pain of two hundred one instantly, I say, thou prating, shame- y hussy! The woman was confounded, ay, hanging down her head and discon- the governor said to the man: Honest e, in the name of God, with your money, eforward, unless you have a mind to lose ot to yoke with any body. The coun- m thanks after the clownishest manner ent his way; and the by-standers were ion at the decisions and sentences of nor. All which, being noted down by ner, was immediately transmitted to aited for it with a longing impatience. eave honest Sancho; for his master at Altisidora's music, calls in ha

imsel Altisidora.

ıd, as if they had been fleas, they would not sui
› sleep, or take the least rest. To these was
ıe disaster of the stocking. But as time is swi
o bar can stop him, he came riding upon the
nd that of morning posted on apace. Whic
Quixote perceiving, he forsook his downy pillo
n haste put on his shamois doublet, and his tra
oots, to conceal the misfortune of his stockin
hrew over his shoulders his scarlet mantle, an
ped on his head a green velvet cap trimmed wit
lace. He hung his trusty trenchant blade in hi
der-belt.† On his wrist he wore a large rosary,
he always carried about him. And with gre
and solemnity he marched towards the anti-c
where the duke and duchess, who were ready
expected him: and as he passed through a gall
tisidora, and the other damsel, her friend, st
posely posted, and waiting for him. As soon s
dora espied Don Quixote, she pretended to fai
and her companion catched her in her lap;
great hurry was unlacing her stays. Don
seeing it, drew near to them, and said: I v
know whence these accidents proceed. I k

[illegible] original and fi

m whence, answered her friend; for
e healthiest damsel in all this family,
never heard so much as an Oh from her
known her; ill betide all the knights-e
world, if they are all ungrateful. Leav
Signor Don Quixote; for the poor girl v
to herself so long as your worship sta
which Don Quixote answered: Be pleas
give orders that a lute be left in my cham
and I will comfort this poor damsel the be
for, in the beginning of love, to be early
the readiest cure. And so saying, away
avoid the observation of those who mi
there. He was hardly gone, when Altisi
ering from her swoon, said to her compa
means let him have the lute; for doubtles
us some music, and it cannot be bad,
They presently went, and gave the duche
of what had passed, and of Don Quixote
lute; and she, being exceedingly rejoi
concerted with the duke and her damse
might play him some trick, which would
ry than mischievous. And, being pleas
contrivance, they waited for night, which
fast as the day had done, which they spen
conversation with Don Quixote. That
duchess dispatched one of her pages, bei
the wood had personated the figure of t
Dulcinea, to Teresa Panza, with her hus
Panza's letter, and a bundle he had left
charging him to bring back an exact accou
should pass. This being done, and elev
night being come, Don Quixote found in
a lute. He touched it; he opened his c
perceived that the people were walking i
and having again run over the strings
ment, and tuned it as well as he could,
and cleared his pipes, and then, with a
not unmusical voice, he sung the foll
which he himself had composed that day.

THE SONG.

Love, with idleness its friend,
O'er a maiden gains its end;

With the free may laugh and toy;
But the modest only choose,
When they tie the nuptial noose.
Love, that rises with the sun,
With his setting beams is gone;
Love, that guest-like visits hearts,
When the banquet's o'er, departs;
And the love that comes to-day,
And to-morrow wings its way,
Leaves no traces on the soul,
Its affections to control.
Where a sovereign beauty reigns,
Fruitless are a rival's pains.
O'er a finish'd picture who
E'er a second picture drew?
Fair Dulcinea, queen of beauty,
Rules my heart, and claims its duty:
Nothing there can take her place;
Nought her image can erase.
Whether fortune smile or frown,
Constancy's the lover's crown;
And, its force divine to prove,
Miracles performs in love.

[illegible] for Don Quixote had proceeded in his

himself was in a panic: and fortune so ordered it, t
two or three of the cats got in at the casement of
chamber, and scouring about from side to side,
would have thought a legion of devils was broke lo
in it. They extinguished the lights that were burn
in the chamber, and endeavoured to make their esca
The cord to which the bells were fastened was
down and pulled up incessantly. Most of the folks
the castle, who were not in the secret, were in
pense and astonishment. Don Quixote got upon
feet; and, laying hold on his sword, he began to m
thrusts at the casement, and cried out aloud: Avau
ye malicious enchanters! avaunt, ye rabble of wizar
for I am Don Quixote de la Mancha, against wh
your wicked arts are of no force nor effect. A
turning to the cats, who were running about the ro
he gave several cuts at them. They took to the ca
ment, and got out at it all but one, which finding
self hard pressed by Don Quixote's slashing, flew
his face, and seized him by the nose with its claws
teeth; the pain whereof made him roar as loud as
was able. Which the duke and duchess hearing,
guessing the occasion, they ran in all haste up to
chamber, and opening it with a master-key, they fo
the poor gentleman striving with all his might to
engage the cat from his face. They entered w
lights, and beheld the unequal combat. The duke
to part the fray, and Don Quixote cried aloud:
no one take him off; leave me to battle it with
demon, this wizard, this enchanter; for I will m
him know the difference betwixt him and me,
who Don Quixote de la Mancha is But the cat,
regarding these menaces, growled on, and kept
hold. At length the duke forced open her claws,
threw her out at the window.

Don Quixote remained with his face like a sie
and his nose not over whole, though greatly dissa
fied that they would not let him finish the combat
[illegible]ly maintained against that caitiff encha
[illegible]etched some oil of Aparicio, and Altisid
[illegible] her lily-white hands, bound up his wour
[illegible]e was so employed, she said to him i
[illegible] *these* misadventures befal you, b
[illegible] *for the sin* of your stubborn dis

and God grant that Sancho your squire may forg
whip himself, that this same beloved Dulcinea of
may never be released from her enchantment, nc
ever enjoy her, or approach her nuptial bed, at
while I live, who adore you. To all this Don Q
returned no other answer than a profound sigh
then stretched himself at full length upon his
humbly thanking the duke and duchess for their
ance, not as being afraid of that cattish, bell-rir
necromantic crew, but as he was sensible of their
intention by their readiness to succour him. The
and duchess left him to his rest, and went away,
little concerned at the ill success of their joke
they did not think this adventure would have p
so heavy and so hard upon Don Quixote; for i
him five days' confinement to his bed; where an
adventure befel him more relishing than the fo
which his historian will not relate at present, t
may attend Sancho Panza, who went on very
and very pleasantly with his government.

CHAP. XV.

Giving a farther account of Sancho's behaviour
government.

THE history relates, that they conducted S
Panza from the court of judicature to a sumptuou
ace, where, in a great hall, was spread an elegant
splendid table: and as soon as Sancho entere
hall, the waits struck up, and in came four pages
water to wash his hands, which Sancho received
great gravity. The music ceased, and Sanch
down at the upper end of the table: for there
but that one chair, and no other napkin or plate
personage, who afterwards proved to be a physi
placed himself, standing, on one side of him, wi
whalebone rod in his hand. They removed a very
white cloth, which covered several fruits, and a
variety of eatables. One, who looked like a stu
said grace, and a page put a laced bib under San
chin. Another, who played the sewer's part,

date of fruit before him:* but scarcely had he eaten a bit, when he of the wand touching the dish with it, the waiters snatched it away from before him with great haste. But the sewer set another dish of meat in its place. Sancho was going to try it, but before he could reach or taste it, the wand had been already at it, and a page whipped that away also with as much speed as he had done the fruit. Sancho seeing it, was surprised, and looking about him, asked, if this repast was to be eaten like a shew of slight of hand? To which he of the wand replied: My lord governor, here must be no other kind of eating but such as is usual and customary in other islands, where there are governors. I, sir, am a physician, and have an appointed salary in this island, for serving the governors of it in that capacity; and I consult their healths much more than my own, studying night and day, and sounding the governor's constitution, the better to know how to cure him when he is sick: and my principal business is, to attend at his meals, to let him eat of what I think is most proper for him, and to remove from him whatever I imagine will do him harm, and be hurtful to his stomach. And therefore I ordered the dish of fruit to be taken away, as being too moist; and that other dish of meat I also ordered away, as being too hot, and having in it too much spice, which increases thirst: for he who drinks much, destroys and consumes the radical moisture in which life consists. Well then, quoth Sancho; yon plate of roasted partridges, which seem to me to be very well seasoned, will they do me any harm? To which the doctor answered: My lord governor shall not eat a bit of them while I have life. Pray, why not? quoth Sancho. The physician answered: Because our master Hippocrates, the northstar, and luminary of medicine, says, in one of his aphorisms, "Omnis saturatio mala, perdicis autem pessima;" that is to say, All repletion is bad, but that of partridges is the worst of all. If it be so, quoth Sancho, pray see, Signor doctor, of all the dishes upon this table, which will do me most good, and which least harm, and let me eat of it without conjuring

* *The Spaniards* and Italians begin dinner with a *melon or other fruit*, as we end it.

-haired food: of that veal, perhaps, ...
bit, were it not a-la-dobed; but as it is, not a
. Said Sancho: That great dish smoking yon-
take to be an olla-podrida,* and, amidst the di-
of things contained in it, surely I may light up-
nething both wholesome and toothsome. Absit,
the doctor; far be such a thought from us;
is not worse nutriment in the world than your
odridas: leave them to prebendaries and rectors
leges, or for country-weddings; but let the tables
vernors be free from them, where nothing but
ess and delicacy ought to preside; and the reason
cause simple medicines are more esteemed than
ound, by all persons, and in all places; for in
es there can be no mistake, but in compounds
may, by altering the quantities of the ingredients.
efore what I would advise at present for Signor
nor's eating, to corroborate and preserve his
h, is, about a hundred of rolled up wafers,* and
thin slices of marmalade, that may sit easy upon
tomach, and help digestion.
ncho, hearing this, threw himself backward in
nair, and, surveying the doctor from head to foot,
a grave voice, asked him his name, and where he
... To which he answered: My lord gover-

red: Why then, Signor doctor Pedro Rezio de o,* native of Tirteafuera, lying on the right hand go from Caraquel to Almoddobar del Campo, ite in Ossuna, get out of my sight this instant, or, sun, I will take a cudgel, and, beginning with ill so lay about me, that there shall not be left ysician in the whole island, at least of those I be ignorant: as for those that are learned, pru- and discreet, I shall respect and honour them ne persons. And I say again, let Pedro Rezio y presence, or I shall take this chair I sit upon, ng it at his head; and if I am called to an ac- for it before the judge, when I am out of office, justify myself by saying, I did God service in a bad physician, the hangman of the public. ive me to eat, or take back your government; office that will not find a man in victuals is not two beans.

doctor was frightened at seeing the governor so ic, and would have taken himself out of the ad not the sound of a post-horn been heard that t in the street. The sewer going to the window, oking out, came back, and said: A courier is l from my lord duke, and must certainly have it some dispatches of importance. The courier d sweating and in a hurry, and pulling a packet his bosom, he delivered it into the governor's and Sancho gave it to the steward, bidding him he superscription, which was this: "To Don o Panza, governor of the island of Barataria, to ivered into his own hands, or into his secreta- Which Sancho hearing, he said: Which is my ary here? One of those present answered: I , sir; for I can read and write, and am a Bisca- With that addition, quoth Sancho, you may ve

---

the original, Sancho calls him "Rezio de mal o," that is, "Doctor positive of the ill omen;" is piece of humour is unavoidably lost in the ation.

cording to the original, "would have [illegible] ," *alluding* to the doctor's fictitious name: [illegible] measure preserved by using our cant phrase [illegible] *g one's self* away."

"It is come to my knowledge, Signor S
Panza, that certain enemies of mine and of
intend one of these nights, to assault it furi
must be watchful and diligent, that they n
tack you unprepared. I am informed also
spies, that four persons in disguise are go
island to take away your life, because they
of your abilities. Have your eyes about
careful who is admitted to speak to you, a
eat nothing sent you as a present. I will t
send you assistance, if you are in any want
upon the whole, I do not doubt but you w
expected from your judgment.

"Your friend, the

From this place, the 16th of August,
at four in the morning.

Sancho was astonished, and the rest seem
too; and, turning to the steward, he said:
thing to be done is, to clap doctor Rezio
for if any person has a design to kill me, i

present my humble service to my lady duchess, and beg her not to forget sending my letter and the bundle by a special messenger to my wife Teresa Panza, which I shall look upon as a particular favour, and will be her humble servant to the utmost of my power. And, by the way, you may put in a service to my master Don Quixote de la Mancha, that he may see I am grateful bread;* and, like a good secretary, and a staunch Biscainer, you may add what you please, or what will turn to best account; and pray, take away the cloth, and give me something to eat; for I will deal well enough with all the spies, murderers, and enchanters, that shall attack me, or my island.

Now a page came in, and said: Here is a countryman about business, who would speak with your lordship concerning an affair, as he says, of great importance. A strange case this, quoth Sancho, that these men of business should be so silly as not to see, that such hours as these are not proper for business! what! belike, we who govern, and are judges, are not made of flesh and bones, like other men? Are we made of marble stone, that we must not refresh at times, when necessity requires it? Before God, and upon my conscience, if my government lasts, as I have a glimmering it will not, I shall hamper more than one of these men of business. Bid this honest man come in for this once; but first see that he be not one of the spies, or one of my murderers. No, my lord, answered the page; he looks like a pitcher-souled fellow; and I know little, or he is as harmless as a piece of bread. You need not fear, quoth the steward, while we are present. Is it not possible, sewer, quoth Sancho, now that the doctor Pedro Rezio is not here, for me to eat something of substance and weight, though it were but a luncheon of bread and an onion? To-night, at supper, quoth the sewer, amends shall be made for the defects of dinner, and your lordship shall have no cause to complain. God grant it, answered Sancho.

Then came in the countryman, who was of a goodly presence; and one might see, a thousand leagues off,

* "Pan agradecido." When the country-people would define an honest, good-natured man, they say, "He is as good as bread itself."

et me tell you, I know [illegible]
ot so far from our town. The business is this, sir,
eeded the peasant. By the mercy of God I was
ried in peace, and in the face of the holy catholic
nan church, I had two sons, bred scholars: the
nger studies for bachelor, and the elder for licen-
e. I am a widower; for my wife died, or rather a
ked physician killed her, by purging her when she
s with child; and, if it had been God's will the
ld had been born, and had proved a son, I would
e put him to study for doctor, that he might not en-
his two brothers, the bachelor and licentiate. So
t, quoth Sancho, if your wife had not died, or had
been killed, you had not now been a widower! No,
tainly, my lord, answered the peasant. We are
ch the nearer, replied Sancho: go on, brother, for
s is an hour rather for bed than business. I say
en, quoth the countryman, that this son of mine, who
to be the bachelor, fell in love, in the same village,
th a damsel called Clara Perlerina, daughter of An-
es Perlerino, a very rich farmer; and this name of
erlerino came not to them by lineal, or any other de-
ent, but because all of that race are subject to the
lsy;* and to mend the name, they call them Perle-
[illegible] the damsel is like any

filing her face, she carries her nose so crooked up, that it seems to be flying from her mouth: and for all that she looks extremely well; for she has a large mouth: and, did she not lack half a score or a dozen teeth and grinders, she might pass, and make a figure, among ladies of the best fashion. I say nothing of her lips; for they are so thin and slender, that, were it the fashion to reel lips, as they do yarn, one might make a skein of them: but, being of a different colour from what is usually found in lips, they have a marvellous appearance; for they are marbled with blue, green, and orange-tawny. And, pray, my lord governor, pardon me, if I paint so minutely the parts of her, who, after all, is to be my daughter; for I love her, and like her mightily. Paint what you will, quoth Sancho; for I am mightily taken with the picture; and had I but dined, I would not desire a better dessert than your portrait. It shall be always at your service, answered the peasant; and the time may come when we may be acquainted, though we are not so now; and, I assure you, my lord, if I could but paint her genteelness, and the tallness of her person, you would admire: but that cannot be, because she is crooked, and crumpled up together, and her knees touch her mouth; though, for all that, you may see plainly, that could she but stand upright, she would touch the ceiling with her head. And she would ere now have given her hand to my bachelor, to be his wife, but that she cannot stretch it out, it is so shrunk: nevertheless her long guttered nails shew the goodness of its make.

So far, so good, quoth Sancho; and now, brother, make account that you have painted her from head to foot: what is it you would be at? come to the point, without so many windings and turnings, so many fetches and digressions. What I desire, my lord, answered the countryman, is, that your lordship would do me the favour to give me a letter of recommendation to her father, begging his consent to the match, since we are pretty equal in our fortunes and natural endowments; for, to say the truth, my lord governor, my son is possessed, and there is scarcely a day in which the evil spirits do not torment him three or four times; and, by having fallen once into the fire, his face is shrivelled as a piece of scorched parchment, and h

ırnishing his house; for, in short, they are to live by
ıemselves, without being subject to the impertinence
f their fathers-in-law. Well, quoth Sancho, see if
ou would have any thing else, and be not ashamed to
ell it. No, for certain, answered the peasant: and
carcely had he said this, when the governor, getting
p, and laying hold of the chair he sat on, said: I vow
o God, Don lubberly, saucy bumpkin, if you do not
et you gone, and instantly avoid my presence, with
his chair will I crack your skull: son of a whore, ras
al, painter for the devil himself! at this time of day
o come and ask me for six hundred ducats! Where
hould I have them, stinkard? and, if I had them, why
hould I give them to thee, jibing fool? What care
or Miguel Turra, or for the whole race of the Perle
inos? Be gone, I say, or, by the life of my lord duke
; will be as good as my word. You are no native of
Miguel Turra, but some scoffer sent from hell to temp
ne. Impudent scoundrel! I have not yet had th
government a day and a half, and you would have m
ıave six hundred ducats? The sewer made signs t
:he countryman to go out of the hall, which he did
hanging down his head, and seemingly afraid, lest th
rovernor should execute his threat; for the knave ver

CHAP. XVI.

Of what befel Don Quixote with Donna Rodriguez, the duchess's duenna; together with other accidents worthy to be written, and had in eternal remembrance.

Above measure discontented and melancholy was the sore-wounded Don Quixote, having his face bound up, and marked, not by the hand of God, but by the claws of a cat; misfortunes incident to knight-errantry. During six days he appeared not in public; on one night of which, lying awake and restless, meditating on his misfortunes, and the persecution he suffered from Altisidora, he perceived somebody was opening his chamber-door with a key, and presently imagined that the enamoured damsel was coming to assault his chastity, and expose him to the temptation of failing in the fidelity he owed to his lady Dulcinea del Toboso. No, said he, (believing what he fancied, and so loud as to be overheard) not the greatest beauty upon earth shall prevail with me to cease adoring her, who is engraven and imprinted in the bottom of my heart, and in the inmost recesses of my entrails; whether, my dearest lady, you be now transformed into a garlic-eating country wench, or into a nymph of the golden Tagus, weaving tissue-webs with gold and silken twist; or whether you are in the power of Merlin or Montesinos: wherever you are, mine you are, and wherever I am, yours I have been, and yours I will remain. The conclusion of these words, and the opening of the door, were at the same instant. Up he stood upon the bed, wrapped from top to toe in a quilt of yellow satin, a woollen cap on his head, and his face and mustachios bound up; his face, because of its scratches, and his mustachios, to keep them from flagging and falling down. In which guise he appeared the most extraordinary phantasm imaginable. He nailed his eyes to the door, and, when he expected to see the poor captivated and sorrowful Altisidora enter, he perceived ap proaching a most reverend duenna, in a long white v

[illegible] to cross himself apa
apparition kept moving forward, and, when it
the middle of the room, it lifted up its eyes,
in what a hurry Don Quixote was crossing
and, if he was afraid at seeing such a figure,
no less dismayed at sight of his, and, seeing
lank and yellow, with the quilt, and the b
which disfigured him, she cried out: Jesus! w
I see? With the fright, the candle fell out
hand, and, finding herself in the dark, she turne
to be gone, and with the fear, treading on he
she tumbled, and fell down. Don Quixote, tr
with affright, began to say: I conjure thee, ph
or whatever thou art, tell me who thou art, an
thou wouldest have with me; if thou art a soul
ment, tell me, and I will do all I can for thee;
am a catholic christian, and love to do good to
world; for that purpose I took upon me the pro
of knight-errantry, an employment which ext
the doing good even to souls in purgatory. The
ed duenna, having herself thus exorcised, gue
Don Quixote's fear by her own, and, in a low an
ful voice, answered: Signor Don Quixote, (if
venture your worship be Don Quixote) I am no
tom, nor apparition, nor soul in [illegible]
worship [illegible]

na Rodriguez, quoth Don Quixote, does pour lady-
, peradventure, come in quality of procuress? If
a do, I give you to understand I am fit for nobody's
arn, thanks to the peerless beauty of my mistress Dulcinea del Toboso. In short, Signora Donna Rodriguez, on condition, you wave all amorous messages, you may go and light your candle, and return hither, and we will discourse of whatever you please to command, with exception as I told you, to all kind of amorous excitements. I bring messages, good sir! answered the duenna: your worship mistakes me very much: I am not yet so advanced in years, to be forced to betake myself to so low an employment; for, God be praised, my soul is still in my body, and all my teeth in my head, excepting a few usurped from me by catarrhs, so common in this country of Arragon. But stay a little, sir, till I go and light my candle, and I will return instantly, to relate my griefs to your worship, as to the redresser of all the grievances in the world. And without staying for an answer, she went out of the room, leaving Don Quixote in expectation of her return.

Straight a thousand thoughts crowded into his mind, touching this new adventure, and he was of opinion he had done ill, and judged worse, to expose himself to the hazard of breaking his plighted troth to his lady, and he said to himself: Who knows but the devil, who is subtle and designing, means to deceive me now with a duenna, though he has not been able to effect it with empresses, queens, duchesses, marchionesses, or countesses? For I have often heard ingenious people say, The devil, if he can, will sooner tempt a man with a flat-nosed than a hawk-nosed woman;* and who can tell but this solitude, this opportunity, and this silence, may awake my desires, which are now asleep, and, in my declining years, make me fall where I never yet stumbled? In such cases, it is better to fly than stand the battle. But sure I am not in my right senses to talk so idly: for it is impossible that a white-veiled, l[illegible] bespectacled duenna should move or excite [illegible] thought in the lewdest breast in the world. [illegible]enna upon earth that has tolerable flesh [illegible] Is there a duenna upon the globe that [illegible]

* "with a foul than a fair object."

[illegible] just returned with a light
white wax; and seeing Don Quixote so m
wrapped up in his quilt, with his bandages
cap, she was again frighted, and, retreat
three steps, she said: Sir knight, am I safe
it to be no very good sign of modesty that
ship is got out of bed. I should rather as
question, madam, answered Don Quixote,
fore I do ask, if I am safe from being ass
ravished? By whom, and from whom, Sir
you expect this security? answered the du
you, and from you, replied Don Quixote: fo
made of marble, nor you, I suppose, of brass
ten o'clock in the morning, but midnight,
what more, as I imagine, and we are in a re
and more secret than the cave, in which the
traitorous Æneas enjoyed the beautiful an
hearted Dido. But, madam, give me your h
desire no greater security than my own c
and reserve, besides what that most reveren
spires. And so saying, he kissed his right
with it took hold of hers, which she gave him
same ceremony.

Here Cid Hamete makes a parenthesis, an
by Mahomet he would have [illegible]

all that is in your careful heart and piteous
for you shall be heard by me with chaste ears,
ted by compassionate deeds. I believe it, sa-
ne duenna; for none but so christian an sa-
ld be expected from your worship's gentle and
presence.

usiness then is, signor Don Quixote, that,
our worship sees me sitting in this chair, and
idst of the kingdom of Arragon, and in the
poor persecuted duenna, I was born in the
of Oviedo, and of a family allied to some of
of that province. But my hard fortune, and
gence of my parents, which reduced them, I
; which way, to untimely poverty, carried me
urt of Madrid, where, for peace' sake, and to
reater inconveniences, my parents placed me
vice of a great lady: and I would have your
know, that, in making needlecases and plain-
as never outdone by any body in all my life.
its left me in service, and returned to their
itry; and, in a few years after, I believe, they
heaven; for they were good and catholic chris-
remained an orphan, and stinted to the mise-
ies, and short commons, usually given in great
such kind of servants. About that time,
ny giving any encouragement for it, a gentle-
r of the family fell in love with me; a man
with a fine beard, and of a comely person, and
, as good a gentleman as the king himself; for
highlander. We did not carry on our amour
y, but it came to the notice of my lady, who,
nore ado, had us married in peace, and in the
ur holy mother the catholic Roman church;
ch marriage sprung a daughter, to finish my
une, if I had any; not that I died in child-bed
nt my full time, and was safely delivered) but
ny husband died soon after of a certain fright
and had I but time to tell the manner how,
ship, I am sure, would wonder.

ie began to weep most tenderly, and said:
, good Signor Don Quixote; for I cannot
myself; but often as I call to mind my un
se, my eyes are brimful. God be my ai
stateliness did he use to carry my lady

c him, and, as soon as my good squire saw i
ned his mule about, as if he designed to wa
n. My lady, who was behind him, said to h
v voice: What are you doing, blockhead? ar
re? The judge civilly stopped his horse, an
eep on your way, sir; for it is my business rs
it upon my lady Donna Casilda; that was n
ess's name. My husband persisted, cap in h
intention to wait upon the judge: which r
rceiving, full of choler and indignation, she
t a great pin, or rather, I believe, a bodki
ick it into his back: whereupon my husband
t, and, writhing his body, down he came w
ly to the ground. Two of her footmen ran
r up, as did the judge and his officers. The
adalajara, I mean the idle people that stood
ere all in uproar. My mistress was forced
me on foot, and my husband went to a bark
on's, telling him he was run quite throu
rough the bowels. The courteousness and b
my spouse was rumoured abroad, in so mu
e boys got it, and teased him with it in the
d, upon this account, and because he was
ort-sighted, my lady turned him away; th
hereof, I verily believe, was the death of him

ool-master, and casts accounts like any usu-
y nothing of her cleanliness; for the running
ot cleaner: and she is now, if I remember
een years of age, five months, and three days,
or less. In a word, the son of a very rich
ho lives not far off in a village of my lord
rew enamoured of this girl of mine; and, to
I know not how it came about, but they got
and, under promise of being her husband, he
d my daughter, and now refuses to perform it.
ugh my lord duke knows the affair, and I have
ed again and again to him, and begged him to
l this same young farmer to marry my daugh-
he turns the deaf ear, and will hardly vouch-
ear me: and the reason is, because the coz-
ave's father is rich, and lends him money, and
for him on all occasions; therefore, he will
lige nor offend him in any wise. Now, good
esire is, that your worship take upon you the
this wrong, either by entreaty, or by force
since all the world says, your worship was
to redress grievances, to right the injured,
ur the miserable. And be pleased, sir, to
y daughter's fatherless condition, her gen-
r youth, and all the good qualities I have
ntioned; for, on my soul and conscience,
amsels my lady has there is not one that
the sole of her shoe: and one of them,
dora, who is reckoned to be the liveliest
lest of them all, falls above two leagues
parison with my daughter; for you must
r, that all is not gold that glitters; and
le Altisidora has more self-conceit than
ore assurance than modesty: besides, she
soundest; for her breath is so strong,
luring to be a moment near her. Nay,
luchess herself——but mum for that;
lls have ears.

lady duchess? quoth Don Quixote.
n Rodriguez, by my life. Thus con-
he duenna, I cannot but answer to
d me, with all truth. Your worship
ote, must have observed the beauty,
ss; that complexion like any bright

and polished sword; those cheeks of milk and crims
with the sun in the one, and the moon in the oth
and that stateliness with which she treads, or rat
disdains the very ground she walks on, that one wo
think she went dispensing health wherever she pass
Let me tell you, sir, she may thank God for it in
first place, and next, two issues she has, one in e
leg, which discharge all the bad humours, of which
physicians say she is full. Holy Mary! quoth D
Quixote, is it possible my lady duchess has such drai
I should never have believed it had the bare-foo
friars themselves told it me; but since madam Dor
Rodriguez says it, it must needs be so. But such
sues, and in such places, must distil nothing but liq
amber: verily I am now convinced, that this mak
of issues is a matter of great consequence in respect
health.

Scarcely had Don Quixote said this, when, wit
great bounce, the chamber door flew open; the surpr
at which made Donna Rodriguez let fall her can
out of her hand, and the room remained as dark a
wolf's mouth,* as the saying is; and presently the p
duenna found herself griped so fast by the throat w
two hands, that she could not squall, and another p
son, very nimbly, without speaking a word, whipp
up her petticoats, and with a slipper, as it seem
gave her so many slaps, that it would have moved on
pity; and though it did that of Don Quixote, he stir
not from the bed, and, not knowing the meaning of
this, he lay still and silent, fearing lest that round a
sound flogging should come next to his turn. And
fear proved not in vain; for the silent executione
leaving the duenna, who durst not cry out, well c
ried, came to Don Quixote; and, turning down
bed-clothes, they pinched him so often and so ha
that he could not forbear going to fisty-cuffs in his o
defence, and all this in marvellous silence. The bat
lasted some half an hour: the phantoms went o
Donna Rodriguez adjusted her petticoats, and, bew
ing her misfortune, marched out at the door, with
saying a word to Don Quixote, who, sad and sor

* *Because a wolf's* mouth is black, say the dicti
aries.

bepinched, confused and pensive, remained alone: where we will leave him, impatient to learn who that perverse enchanter was that had handled him so roughly. But that shall be told in its proper place; for Sancho Panza calls upon us, and the method of the history requires it.

CHAP. XVII.

Of what befel Sancho Panza as he was going the round of his island.

We left the grand governor moody and out of humour at the knavish picture-drawing peasant, who, instructed by the steward, and he by the duke, played off Sancho; who maugre his ignorance, rudeness, and insufficiency, held them all tack, and said to those about him, and to doctor Pedro Rezio, who, when the secret of the duke's letter was over, came back into the hall: I now plainly perceive, that judges and governors must or ought to be made of brass, if they would be insensible of importunities of your men of business, who, being intent upon their own affairs alone, come what will of it, at all hours, and at all times, will needs be heard and dispatched; and if the poor judge does not hear and dispatch them, either because he cannot, or because it is not the proper time for giving them audience, presently they murmur and traduce him, gnawing his very bones, and calumniating him and his family. Foolish man of business, be not in such haste; wait for the proper season and conjuncture for negotiation: come not at dinner-time, nor at bed-time; for judges are made of flesh and blood, and must give to their nature what their nature requires; except only poor I, who do not so by mine, thanks to signor Pedro Rezio Tirteafuera here present, who would have me die of hunger, and affirms that this kind of dying is in order to live: God grant the same life to him and all
tribe; I mean, bad physicians; for good
alms and laurels. All, who knew San-
re in admiration to hear him talk so ele
d not tell what to ascribe it to, unle
weighty employments quicken and

lighten some understandings, as they confound s
stupify others. In short, doctor Pedro Rezio Agu
de Tirteafuera promised he should sup that nig
though it were contrary to all the aphorisms of Hip
crates. With this the governor rested satisfied, a
expected with great impatience, the coming of
night, and the hour of supper; and though time to
thinking, stood stock still, yet at length the wished-
hour came, and they gave him some cow-beef, hasl
with onions and calves' feet, somewhat of the stale
boiled. However he laid about him, with more rel
than if they had given him Milan godwits, Ron
pheasants, veal of Sorrento, partridges of Moron,
geese of Lavajos; and in the midst of supper, turni
to the doctor, he said: Look you, master doct
henceforward take no care to provide me your n
things to eat, nor your tit-bits; for it will be throw
my stomach quite off the hinges, which is accuston
to goats'-flesh, cow-beef, and bacon, with turnips a
onions; and if perchance you give it court kicksha
it receives them with squeamishness, and sometir
with loathing. What master sewer here may do, is,
get me some of those eatables you call your olla-poc
das, and the stronger they are the better:* and
may insert and stuff in them whatever you will; fo
it be an eatable, I shall take it kindly, and will one
make you amends: and let nobody play upon me;
either we are, or we are not: and let us all live and
together in peace and good friendship; for when G
sends day-light, it is day for every body. I will gov
this island, without losing my own right, or tak
away another man's, and let every one keep a g
look-out, and mind each man his own business: fo

* An olla-podrida is a dish consisting of a great nu
ber of ingredients, as flesh, fowl, &c. all stewed
gether. Podrida is usually interpreted rotten, as if
stewing them together was supposed to have the sa
effect, as to making them tender, as rottenness wo
have. But Covarruvias, in his etymologies, derive
from "poderoso, powerful," because all the ingre
ents are substantial and nourishing. And this is c
firmed by Sancho's adding, "the *stronger* they are
better."

would have them to know, the devil is in the wind,* and, if they put me upon it, they shall see wonders. Ay, ay, make yourselves honey, and the wasps will devour you. Certainly, my lord governor, quoth the sewer, there is reason in all your worship says, and I dare engage in the name of all the islanders of this island that they will serve your worship with all punctuality, love, and good-will; for your sweet way of governing from the very first leaves us no room to do, or to think any thing, that may redound to the disservice of your worship. I believe it, answered Sancho, and they would be fools, if they did, or thought otherwise. And I tell you again to take care for my sustenance, and for my Dapple's, which is what is most important in this business; and when the hour comes, we will go the round; for it is my intention to clear this island of all manner of filth, of vagabonds, idlers, and sharpers. For you must understand, friends, that idle and lazy people in a commonwealth, are the same as drones in a beehive, which eat the honey that the industrious bees lay up in store. My design is to protect the peasants preserve to the gentry their privileges, reward ingenious artists, and above all, to have regard to religion and to the honour of the religious. What think ye of this, my friends? Do I say something, or do I crack my brain to no purpose? My lord governor, quoth the steward, speaks so well, that I wonder to hear a man, so void of learning as your worship, who, I believe, cannot so much as read, say such and so many things, and all so sententious and instructive, and so far beyond all that could be expected from your worship's former understanding by those who sent us, and by us, who are come hither. But every day produces new things; jests turn into earnest, and jokers are joked upon.

The night came, and, the governor having supped with the license of signor doctor Rezio, they prepared for going the round, and he set out with the secretary, the steward, the sewer, and the historiographer, who had the care of recording his actions, together with sergeants and notaries, enough to have formed a mid-

* Literally, "the devil is in Cantillana." Cantillana is a town in the province of Andalusia, in Spain, the banks of the river Guadalquivir.

, the antagonist, said: My lord gove
will briefly relate the matter: Your honour mu
derstand, that this gentleman is just come from
ning, in that gaming-house yonder over the
above a thousand reals, and God knows how; and
ing present, gave judgment in his favour, in m
doubtful point, against the dictates of my consci
Up he got with the winnings, and, when I exp
he would have given me a crown at least, by wa
present, as is the usage and custom among gentl
of distinction, such as I am, who stand by, ready
adventures to back unreasonable demands, and to
vent quarrels, he pocketed up his money, and wen
of the house. I followed him in dudgeon, and,
good words and civil expressions, desired him to
me though it were but eight reals, since he know
am a man of honour, and have neither office nor be
fice, my parents having brought me up to nothing,
left me nothing: and this knave, as great a thie
Cacus, and as arrant a sharper as Andradilla, w
give me but four reals. Judge, my lord governor,
little shame, and how little conscience he has.
in faith, had it not been for your honour's comin
would have made him disgorge his winnings, and
taught him how many ounces go to

... unfairly gotten;
... his being an honest man, a
... other alleged, there could be no
than his refusal to comply with his dem
are always tributaries to the lookers c
them. That is true, quoth the stewar
my lord governor, to adjudge what shall
these men. What shall be done is tl
Sancho: You, master winner, good, bad, c
give your hackster here immediately a hu
and pay down thirty more for the poor pris
you, sir, who have neither office nor benefi
without any employment in this island, take
dred reals instantly, and, some time to-morr
of this island for ten years, on pain, if you
of finishing your banishment in the next life:
hang you on a gallows, or at least, the hang
do it for me, and let no man reply, lest I pu
severely. The one disbursed; the other recei
one went out of the island; the other went hon
house; and the governor said: It shall cost m
or I will demolish these gaming-houses; for I
suspicion that they are very prejudicial. T
least, quoth one of the scriveners, your honour
put down; for a great person keeps it, and w
loses in the year is beyond comparison mor
what he gets by the cards. Your worship ma
your authority against petty gaming-houses, wh
more harm, and cover more abuses: for in those,
belong to persons of quality, notorious cheats d
put their tricks in practice; and, since the vice
's become a common practice, it is better it sh
orward in the houses of people of distinction, t
hose of mean quality, where they take in unfo
ubbles after midnight, and strip off their ver
Well, master notary, quoth Sancho, there is
al to be said on this subject.
And now up came a servant, having laid ba

---

in, is a common practice among ...
many get their livin...

... trade are you of? quoth
A weaver, answered the youth. And what
weave? quoth Sancho. Iron heads for spear
please your worship. You are pleasant with
value yourself on being a joker, quoth Sanch
very well; and whither were you going? To t
air,* sir, replied the lad. And, pray, where do
take the air in this island? said Sancho. W
blows, answered the youth. Good, quoth Sanc
answer to the purpose: you are a discreet youth
now, make account that I am the air, and that
in your poop, and drive you to gaol. Here, la
on him, and carry him to prison: I will make hin
there to-night without air. Before God, quot
youth, your honour can no more make me sleep
than you can make me a king. Why cannot I
you sleep in prison? demanded Sancho: have
power to confine or release you, as I please?
much power soever your worship may have, you
not enough to make me sleep in prison. Why
replied Sancho: away with him immediately, wh
shall see his mistake with his own eyes; and, le
gaoler should put his interested generosity in pra
I will sconce him in the penalty of two thousan
cats, if he suffers you to stir a step from th
All this

chains and fetters, and clapped into the dun
heavy penalties laid upon the gaoler, if he l
out; and let us suppose these orders punctual
yet, for all that, if I have no mind to sleep, I
awake all night, without so much as shuttin
lids, can your worship, with all your power
sleep whether I will or no? No, certainly, s
retary, and the man has carried his point.
quoth Sancho, you would forbear sleeping o
your own will, and not out of pure contradicti
No, my lord, said the youth, not even i
Then, God be with you, quoth Sancho; g
sleep, and I wish you a good night's rest; fo
endeavour to deprive you of it: but I wo
you, for the future, not to be so jocose with
justice; for you may meet with one that n
joke over your noddle.

The youth went his way, and the governo
his round; and, a little while after, came
sergeants, who had hold of a man, and sai
governor, this here, who seems to be a r
so, but a woman and no ugly one either
clothes. They lifted up two or three la
her face, by the light of which they discove
a woman, seemingly sixteen years of age
abouts. Her hair was tucked up under
cawl of gold and green silk, and she herse
as a thousand pearls. They viewed her fr
foot, and saw she had on a pair of flesh-colo
ings, with garters of white taffeta, and tass
and seed-pearl: her breeches were of gre
tissue, and she had on a loose coat of the
which she wore a very fine waistcoat of wh
stuff. Her shoes were white, and such as
She had no sword, but a very rich dagger;
fingers were many rings, and those very goo
a word, every body liked the maiden; but n
all knew her, and the inhabitants of the
they could not imagine who she should be.
were in the secret of the jests put upon San
ed the most; for this adventure was not o
triving, and therefore they were in suspen
the issue of this unforeseen accident.
struck with the beauty of the young la

her who she was, whither she was going, and what ha
moved her to dress herself in that habit. She, fixin
her eyes on the ground, with a modest bashfulness
answered: Sir, I cannot declare so publicly what I an
so much concerned to keep a secret: only one thing
must assure you, that I am no thief, nor criminal per
son, but an unhappy maiden, whom the force of a cer
tain jealousy has made break through the respect du
to modesty. The steward, hearing this, said to San
cho: My lord governor, order all your attendants to g
aside, that this lady may speak her mind with less con
cern. The governor did so, and they all went aside
excepting the steward, the sewer, and the secretary
Then the damsel proceeded, saying: I, gentlemen, ar
daughter to Pedro Perez Mazorca, who farms the woo
of this town, and comes frequently to my father's house
This will not pass, madam, said the steward; for
know Pedro Perez very well, and am sure he has n
child, son nor daughter; and, besides your saying h
is your father, you immediately add, that he comes o
ten to your father's house. I took notice of that, quot
Sancho. Indeed, gentlemen, answered the damsel,
am in such confusion, that I know not what I say: bu
the truth is, I am daughter to Diego de la Llana, whor
you must all know. This may pass, answered th
steward; for I know Diego de la Llana, that he is
gentleman of quality, and rich, and has a son and
daughter: and, since he has been a widower, nobod
in all this town can say, they have seen the face of hi
daughter; for he keeps her so confined, that he wil
not give the sun leave to shine upon her: and repor
says, she is extremely handsome. That is true, an
swered the damsel, and that daughter am I. Whethe
fame lies, or no, as to my beauty, you, gentlemen, ar
judges, since you have seen me: and then she began t
weep most bitterly. Which the secretary perceiving
he whispered the sewer, and said very softly: Withou
doubt, something of importance must have been th
occasion, that so considerable a person as this youn
lady, has left her own house, in such a dress, and a
such an hour. No doubt of that, answered the sewer
besides, this suspicion is confirmed by her tears. San
cho comforted her the best he could, and desired he
to tell them the whole matter, without fear; for the

would all endeavour to serve her with great sincerity, and by all possible ways.

The case is, gentlemen, replied she, that my father has kept me locked up these ten years past; for so long has my mother been under ground. Mass is said in our house in a rich chapel, and, in all this time, I have seen nothing but the sun in the heavens by day, and the moon and stars by night; nor do I know what streets, squares, or churches are, nor even men, excepting my father and brother, and Pedro Perez the wool-farmer, whose constant visits to our house led me to say, he was my father, to conceal the truth. This confinement, and denying me leave to go out, though but to church, has for many days and months past disquieted me very much. I had a mind to see the world, or at least the town where I was born, thinking this desire was no breach of that decency young ladies ought to preserve toward themselves. When I heard talk of bull-feasts, of darting canes on horseback, and the representation of plays, I asked my brother, who is a year younger than myself, to tell me what those things were, and several others that I had never seen: which he used to do in the best manner he could: and all this did but inflame the desire I had of seeing them. In a word, to shorten the story of my ruin, I prayed and entreated my brother———O that I had never prayed nor entreated him! and then she fell to weeping again. The steward said to her: Proceed, madam, and make an end of telling us what has befallen you; for your words and tears hold us all in suspense. I have but few words left to speak, answered the damsel, though many tears to shed; for such misplaced desires as mine can be atoned for no other way.

The beauty of the damsel had rooted itself in the soul of the sewer, who held up his lanthorn again to have another view of her; and he fancied the tears she shed were dew-drops of the morning, or even orient pearls: and he heartily wished her misfortune might not be so great as her tears and sighs seemed to indicate. The governor was out of all patience at the girl's dilatory manner of telling her story, and bid her keep them no longer in suspense: for it grew late, and they had a great deal more of the town to go over. She, between interrupted sobs, and broken sighs,

got out of our house; and, guided by t
our own unruly fancies, we traversed t
and, as we were returning home, we s
pany of people, and my brother said to
must be the round; put wings to your
ter me, that they may not know us, or
for us. And, so saying, he turned his l
not to run, but to fly. In less than
down through the fright, and at that in
of justice coming up, seized, and bro
your honour; where my indiscreet long
ne with shame before so many peo
then, madam, quoth Sancho, no other
fallen you, nor did jealousy, as you t
ginning of your story, carry you from h
thing, said she, has befallen me, nor is
ousy in the case, but merely a desir
world, which went no farther than see
of this town.

The coming up of two sergeants, o
overtaken and seized her brother, as l

so and so, we got out of our father's house by su
contrivance, only out of curiosity, and with no o
design at all; the tale had been told, and all t
weepings and wailings, and takings-on at this
might have been spared. That is true, answered
damsel; but the confusion I was in was so great,
it did not suffer me to demean myself as I ou
There is no harm, answered Sancho: we will see
safe to your father's; perhaps he has not missed
and henceforward be not so childish, nor so eage
see the world: for, The maid that is modest, a
broken leg, should stay at home; and, The wo
and the hen are lost by gadding abroad; and, She
desires to see, desires no less to be seen. I sa
more. The youth thanked the governor for the fa
he intended them, in seeing them safe home, an
they bent their course that way; for the house wa
far off. When they were arrived, the brother t
up a little stone to a grated window, and that ins
a servant-maid, who waited for them, came down,
opened the door, and they went in, leaving every
in admiration at their genteelness and beauty, as
as at their desire of seeing the world by night,
without stirring out of the town: but they impute
to their tender years. The sewer's heart was pie
through and through, and he proposed within him
to demand her, the next day, of her father in marr
taking it for granted he would not refuse him, as t
a servant of the duke's. Sancho too had some thou
of matching the young man with his daughter Sa
ca, and determined to bring it about the first oppor
ty, fancying to himself, that no match would be r
ed the governor's daughter. Thus ended that ni
round, and two days after the government too, w
put an end to all his designs and expectations, as
hereafter be shewn.

Cid Hamete, the most punctual sear
very atoms of this true history, says, that
Rodriguez went out of her chamber t
Quixote's, another donna, who lay with h
it; and, as all duennas have the itch of li
prying into, and smelling out things, she
so softly, that good Rodriguez did not perc
as soon as the duenna saw her enter Do
chamber, that she might not be wanting in
humour of all duennas, which is to be tell
she went that instant, to acquaint the du
Donna Rodriguez was then actually in Do
chamber. The duchess acquainted the du
and desired his leave, that she and Altisido
and see what was the duenna's business
Quixote. The duke gave it her; and they
softly, and step by step, went and posted
close to the door of Don Quixote's chamb
close, that they overheard all that was said
when the duchess heard the duenna expos
tains* of her issues, she could not bear it, no
either; and so, brimful of choler, and lon
venge, they bounced into the room, and pi
Quixote, and whipped the duen
related

roceeding in her design of making sport with
ote, dispatched the page, who had acted the
ulcinea in the project of her disenchantment,
Panza, with her husband's letter (for Sancho
en up with his government, that he had quite
and with another from herself, and a large
ich corals by way of present.
e history tells us, that the page was very dis-
sharp, and being extremely desirous to please
id lady, he departed with a very good will,
o's village, and being arrived near it, he saw
ien washing in a brook, of whom he demand-
r could tell him, whether one Teresa Panza,
ie Sancho Panza, squire to a knight called
ote de la Mancha, lived in that town. At
estion, a young wench, who was washing,
, and said: That Teresa Panza is my moth-
at Sancho my father, and that knight our
Come then, damsel, quoth the page, and bring
r mother; for I have a letter and a present
om that same father of yours. That I will,
ly heart, sir, answered the girl, who seemed
it fourteen years of age: and leaving the
was washing to one of her companions, with-
g any thing on her head or her feet (for she
egged and dishevelled) she ran skipping along
page's horse, saying: Come along, sir; for
stands just at the entrance of the village,
you will find my mother, in pain enough for
heard any news of my father this great
bring her such good news, quoth the page,
ay well thank God for it. In short, with
running, and capering, the girl came to the
id, before she got into the house, she called
he door: Come forth, mother Teresa, come
ie forth; for here is a gentleman, who brings
id other things from my good father. At
ce her mother Teresa Panza came out, spin-
taff full of tow, having on a gray petticoat,
that it looked as if it had been docked at the
with a gray boddice also, and her smock-
anging about it. She was not very old,
e seemed to be above forty; but was strong,
wy, and hard as a hazel-nut. She, seeing

her daughter, and the page on horseback, said: What is the matter, girl? what gentleman is this? It is an humble servant of my lady Donna Teresa Panza, answered the page. And, so saying, he flung himself from his horse, and, with great respect, went and kneeled before the lady Teresa, saying: Be pleased, Signora Donna Teresa, to give me your ladyship's hand to kiss, as being the lawful and only wife of Signor Don Sancho Panza, sole governor of the island of Barataria. Ah, dear sir, forbear, do not so, answered Teresa; for I am no court dame, but a poor country-woman, daughter of a ploughman, and wife of a squire-errant, and not of any governor at all. Your ladyship, answered the page, is the most worthy wife of an archworthy governor; and for proof of what I say, be pleased, madam, to receive this letter, and this present. Then he pulled out of his pocket a string of corals, each bead in gold; and putting it about her neck, he said: This letter is from my lord governor, and another that I have here, and these corals, are from my lady duchess, who sends me to your ladyship. Teresa was amazed, and her daughter neither more nor less. And the girl said: May I die, if our master Don Quixote be not at the bottom of this business, and has given my father the government, or earldom, he so often promised him. It is even so, answered the page; and, for Signor Don Quixote's sake, my lord Sancho is now governor of the island of Barataria, as you will see by this letter. Pray, young gentleman, quoth Teresa, be pleased to read it; for, though I can spin, I cannot read a tittle. Nor I neither, added Sanchica: but stay a little, and I will go and call somebody that can, though it be the priest himself, or the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, who will come with all their hearts to hear news of my father. There is no need of calling any body, quoth the page; for though I cannot spin, I can read, and will read it. So he read it: but it having been inserted before, it is purposely omitted here. Then he pulled out that from the duchess, which was as follows:—

"Friend TERESA,

"The good qualities, both of integrity and capacity, *of your husband* Sancho, moved and induced me to de*sire the duke my* spouse to give him the government of

one of the many islands he has. I am informed he governs like any hawk; at which I and my lord duke are mightily pleased; and I give great thanks to heaven, that I have not been deceived in my choice of him for the said government. For let me tell madam Teresa, it is a difficult thing to find a good governor now-a-days, and God make me as good as Sancho governs well. I send you hereby, my dear, a string of corals, set in gold. I wish they were of oriental pearl: but, whoever gives thee an egg, has no mind to see thee dead. The time will come, when we shall be better acquainted, and converse together, and God knows what may happen. Commend me to Sanchica your daughter, and tell her from me to get herself ready; for I mean to marry her toppingly, when she least thinks of it. I am told the acorns of your town are very large: pray send me some two dozen of them; for I shall esteem them very much as coming from your hand; and write to me immediately, advising me of your health and welfare; and if you want any thing, you need but open your mouth, and your mouth shall be measured. So God keep you.

Your loving Friend,

The DUCHESS."

From this place.

Ah! quoth Teresa, at hearing the letter, how good, how plain, how humble a lady! Let me be buried with such ladies as this, and not with such gentlewomen as this town affords, who think, because they are gentlefolks, the wind must not blow upon them; and they go to church with as much vanity as if they were very queens. One would think they took it for a disgrace to look upon a country-woman; and you see here how this good lady, though she be a duchess, calls me friend, and treats me as if I were her equal, and equal may I see her to the highest steeple in La Mancha. As to the acorns, sir, I will send her ladyship a pocketful, and such as, for their bigness, people may come to see and admire from far and near. And for the present, Sanchica, see and make much of this gentleman: take care of his horse, and bring some new-laid eggs out of the stable, and slice some rashers of bacon, and let entertain him like any prince; for the good new

... let me wear it a few days about my neck ... daughter, answer
methinks it cheers my very heart. You wil
cheered, quoth the page, when you see th
have in this portmanteau: It is a habit of
cloth, which the governor wore only one day
ing match, and has sent it all to signora
May he live a thousand years, answered Sanc
the bearer neither more nor less, ay, and two
if need be.

Teresa now went out of the house with th
and the beads about her neck, and playing as
along with her fingers upon the letters, as if
been a timbrel. And accidentally meeting th
and Sampson Carrasco, she began to dance, a
In faith we have no poor relations now; we h
government: ay, ay, let the proudest gentlew
them all meddle with me; I will make her kn
distance.* What is the matter, Teresa Panza
extravagances are these? and what papers are
demanded the priest. No other extravagances,
she, but that these are letters from duchesses and
nors, and these about my neck are true coral; t
marias and the paternosters are of beaten gold
am a governess. God be our aid. Teres
they: we understand

and the priest stared at e
what they read. The bach
brought those letters. Tere
come home with her to her h
messenger, who was a youth
and that he had brought her
twice as much. The priest t
neck, and viewed and reviewe
fied they were right, he begai
said: By the habit I wear, I
nor what to think of these lette
On one hand I see and feel the
rals, and on the other hand I read
to desire a dozen or two of acorns
tally, if you can, quoth Carrasc
see the bearer of this packet, wh
light into these difficulties which p
so, and Teresa went back with the
and Sanchica cutting a rasher to fry
ggs,* for the page's dinner; whos
ppearance pleased them both very n
d saluted him, and he them, Sampa
I them news both of Don Quixote a
for, though they had read Sancho
's letters, still they were confounde
ise what Sancho's government coul
ally of an island, most or all those
an belonging to his majesty. To w
ered: That Signor Sancho Panza
is no manner of doubt; but wheth
hat he governs or not, I concern n
t it suffice, that it is a place contai
nd inhabitants. As to the acorns, I
s is so humble and affable, that he
orns of a country woman is nothi
e has sent to borrow a comb of
rs. For you must know, gentleme
Arragon, though of as great quali
ty, nor so ceremonious, as the ladi
treat people more upon the level.

aid as close together in the fry
pavement.

While they were in the midst of this discourse, i came Sanchica, with a lap full of eggs, and said to th page: Pray, sir, does my father, now he is a governor wear trunk-hose?* I never observed that, answere the page; but doubtless he does. God's my life! re plied Sanchica, what a sight must it be to see my fa ther with laced breeches! Is it not strange, that, ev er since I was born, I have longed to see my fathe with his breeches laced to his girdle? I warrant yo will, if you live, answered the page: before God, if hi government lasts but two months, he is in a fair wa to travel with a cape to his cap. The priest and th bachelor easily perceived, that the page spoke jesting ly: but the fineness of the corals, and the hunting-suit which Sancho had sent (for Teresa had already show them the habit) undid all. Nevertheless, they could no forbear smiling at Sanchica's longing, and more, whe Teresa said: Master priest, do so much as inquire, i any body be going to Madrid or Toledo, who may bu me a farthingale round and completely made, and fash ionable, and one of the best that is to be had; for, ver ily, verily, I intend to honour my husband's govern ment as much as I can; and, if they vex me, I will ge me to this court myself, and ride in my coach as wel as the best of them there; for she, who has a governo for her husband, may very well have one and maintai it too.† Ay, marry, quoth Sanchica, and would t

* "Calcas atacadas." They are breeches and stock ings all in one, and laced, or clasped, or tied to th girdle.

† Teresa's hopes of riding in her coach may be a sa tire on the extravagance of the Spaniards in their equi pages, which was arrived to such a pitch, that it wa found necessary to restrain it by law; as we learn fron Don Lorenzo Vander Hamin, in the first book of hi "Life of Don John of Austria," where speaking of th arrival of Charles Pubest, a domestic of the empero Charles V. in a coach or chariot, he tells us, "whol cities ran out to stare at it, so little known was thi sort of luxury at that time: for then they only mad use of carts drawn by oxen, and in them were see *riding the most considerable* persons of the court: but *within a few years* (threescore and ten, or there

God it were to day rather than to-morrow, thou
folks, that saw me seated in that coach with my la
mother, should say: Do but see such an one, daugh
of such an one, stuffed with garlic; how she sits
state, and lolls in her coach like the pope's lad
But let them jeer, so they trudge in the dirt, and I r
in my coach with my feet above the ground. A l
year and a worse month to all the murmurers in
world; and, if I go warm, let folks laugh. Say I w
mother? Ay, mighty well, daughter, answered Te
sa: and my good man Sancho foretold me all this,
even greater good luck; and you shall see, daughter
will never stop till it has made me a countess; for,
be lucky, the whole business is to begin: and as I h
often heard your good father say, (who, as he is yours
also the father of proverbs) When they give you
heifer, make haste with the halter; so, when a gove
ment is given you, seize it; when they give you
earldom, lay your claws on it; and when they whis
to you† with a good gift, snap at it: No, no, sleep
and do not answer to the lucky hits, and the good f
tune, that stand calling at the door of your hou
And what care I? added Sanchica; let who will s
when they see me step it stately, and bridle it, T
higher the monkey climbs, the more he exposes
bald buttocks, and so forth.

The priest, hearing this, said: I cannot believe,
that all of this race of the Panzas were born with
bushel of proverbs in their bellies: I never saw
of them, who did not scatter them about, at all tim
and in all the discourses they ever held. I believe

---

bouts) it was found necessary to prohibit coaches b
royal proclamation, to such a height was this "int
nal vice" got, which has done so much mischief
Castile."

* "Papese, A she-pope." Our translators have r
dered this Pope Joan. But there is more humou
making the country people so ignorant as to bel
the *pope had, if not* a wife, a concubine, as man
the great clergy had, than in supposing they ha
heard of Pope Joan.

† *In the original,* "when they cry Tus, Tu
is, as people call dogs to their porridge.

too, quoth the page; for my lord governor Sancho ut, ters them at every step; and though many of them are wide of the purpose, still they please, and my lady duchess and the duke commend them highly. You persist then in affirming, sir, quoth the bachelor, that this business of Sancho's government is real and true, and that these presents and letters are really sent by a duchess? For our parts, though we touch the presents, and have read the letters, we believe it not, and take it to be one of our countryman Don Quixote's adventures, who thinks every thing of this kind done by way of enchantment: and therefore I could almost find in my heart to touch and feel your person, to know whether you are a visionary messenger, or one of flesh and bones. All I know of myself, gentlemen, answered the page, is, that I am a real messenger, and that Signor Sancho Panza actually is a governor; and that my lord duke, and my lady duchess, can give, and have given the said government; and I have heard it said, that the said Sancho Panza behaves himself most notable in it. Whether there be any enchantment in this, or not, you may dispute by yourselves: for, by the oath I am going to take, which is by the life of my parents, who are living, and whom I dearly love, I know nothing more of the matter. It may be so, replied the bachelor: but Dubitat Augustinus. Doubt who will, answered the page; the truth is what I tell you, and truth will always get above a lie, like oil above water: and, if you will not believe me, Operibus credite et non verbis. Come one of you, gentlemen, along with me, and you shall see with your eyes what you will not believe by the help of your ears. That jaunt is for me, quoth Sanchica: take me behind you, sir, upon your nag; for I will go with all my heart to see my honoured fatner. The daughters of governors, said the page, must not travel alone, but attended with coaches and litters, and good store of servants. Before God, answered Sanchica, I can travel as well upon an ass's colt, as in a coach; I am none of your tender squeamish folks. Peace, wench, quoth Teresa; you know not what you say, and the gentleman is in the right; for, According to reason, each thing in its season: when it was Sancho, it was Sancha; and when governor, mad am, Said I amiss? Madam Teresa says more than sh

imagines, quoth the page; and pray, give me to
and dispatch me quickly, for I intend to return h
this night. To which the priest said: Come, sir,
do penance with me; for madam Teresa has more g
will, than good cheer, to welcome so worthy a gu
The page refused at first, but at length thought it m
for his good to comply, and the priest very willingly t
him home with him, that he might have an opport
ty of inquiring at leisure after Don Quixote and
exploits. The bachelor offered Teresa to write
swers to her letters: but she would not let him med
in her matters: for she looked upon him as somew
of a wag: and so she gave a roll of bread and a cou
of eggs to a young noviciate friar, who could wr
who wrote for her two letters, one for her husband,
the other for the duchess, and both of her inditi
and they are none of the worst recorded in this gr
history, as will be seen hereafter.

CHAP. XIX.

*Of the progress of Sancho Panza's government, u
other entertaining events.*

Now appeared the day succeeding the night of
governor's round; which the sewer passed with
sleeping, his thoughts being taken up with the cou
nance, air, and beauty of the disguised damsel; and
steward spent the remainder of it in writing to his
and lady what Sancho Panza said and did, equ
wondering at his deeds and sayings; for his words
actions were intermixed with strong indications
of discretion and folly. In short, signor governor
up, and by the direction of doctor Pedro Rezio,
gave him, to break his fast, a little conserve, and
draughts of cold water; which Sancho would gl
have exchanged for a piece of bread and a bunch
grapes. But, seeing it was more by force, than
will, he submitted to it with sufficient grief to hi
and toil to his stomach; Pedro Rezio making
lieve, that, to eat but little, and that of slight
quickened the judgment, which was the
thing that could be for persons appointed to

was this: My lord; A main river divid
of one lordship——pray, my lord, b
it is a case of importance, and some
say then, that upon this river stood a b
head of it a gallows, and a kind of co
seat of judicature; in which there were
judges, whose office it was to give ser
to a law enjoined by the owner of t
bridge, and of the lordship; which l
form: Whoever passes over this bridge
to the other, must first take an oath, f
comes, and what business he is going
swears true, they shall let him pass;
lie, he shall die for it upon yonder g
any remission. This law, and the rig
thereof, being known, several persons
by what they swore it was soon perc
the truth, and the judges let them pass
fell out, that a certain man, taking the
said by the oath he had taken, he was
on the gallows which stood there, and

bour; for I have more of the blunt than the acute in me: nevertheless, repeat me the business over again, that I may understand it; perhaps I may hit the mark. The querist repeated what he had said once or twice, and Sancho said: In my opinion the affair may be briefly resolved, and it is thus: The man swears he is going to die upon the gallows, and if he is hanged, he swore the truth, and by the law established ought to be free, and to pass the bridge; and, if they do not hang him, he swore a lie, and by the same law he ought to be hanged. It is just as signor governor says, quoth the messenger, and nothing more is wanting to the right stating and understanding of the case. I say then, replied Sancho, that they let pass that part of the man that swore the truth, and hang that part that swore a lie: and thus the condition of the passage will be literally fulfilled. If so, signor governor, replied the querist, it will be necessary to divide the man into two parts the false and the true; and if he is cut asunder, he must necessarily die, and so there is not a tittle of the law fulfilled, and there is an express necessity of fulfilling the law. Come hither, honest man, answered Sancho: either I am a very dunce, or there is as much reason to put this passenger to death, as to let him live and pass the bridge; for, if the truth saves him, the lie equally condemns him: and this being so, as it really is, I am of opinion, that you tell those gentlemen who sent you to me, that since the reasons for condemning and acquitting him are equal, they let him pass freely; for it is always commendable to do good rather than harm; and this I would give under my hand, if I could write: and, in this case, I speak not of my own head, but upon recollection of a precept given me, among many others, by my master Don Quixote, the night before I set out to be governor of this island; which was, that when justice happens to be in the least doubtful, I should incline and lean to the side of mercy; and God has been pleased to make me remember it in the present case, in which it comes in so pat. It does so, answered the steward, and for my part, I think Lycurgus himself, who gave laws to the Lacedæmonians, could not have given a better judgment, than that now given by the great Panza: and let us have no more hearings this morning, and I will give order th

which he had in commission.

It fell out then, that, having di
all the rules and aphorisms of dc
taking away the cloth, a courier c
from Don Quixote to the governo
secretary read it first to himself
nothing in it that required secrec
The secretary did so, and, glancing
may it be read aloud, for what
writes to your lordship deserves
written in letters of gold; and
these:—

Don Quixote de la Mancha's letter
governor of the island of

"When I expected, friend Sanch
news of your negligences and imp
had accounts of your discretion; for
ticular thanks to heaven, that can r
the dunghill, and make wise men of
you

and such as is neat and handsomely made. To gain the good-will of the people you govern, two things, among others, you must do: One is, to be civil to all; (though I have already told you this) and the other is, to take care that there be plenty, since nothing is so discouraging to the poor as hunger, and dearness of provisions. Publish not many edicts, and when you do, see that they are good ones, and, above all, that they are well observed; for edicts that are not kept are as if they had not been made, and serve only to shew, that the prince, though he had wisdom and authority sufficient to make them, had not the courage to see them put in execution: and laws that intimidate at their publication, and are not executed, become like the log king of the frogs, which terrified them at first; but in time they contemned him, and got upon his back. Be a father to virtue, and a step-father to vice. Be not always severe, nor always mild; but choose the mean between these two extremes; for therein consists the main point of discretion. Visit the prisons, the shambles, and the markets; for the presence of the governor in such places is of great importance. Comfort the prisoners, that they may hope to be quickly dispatched. Be a bug-bear to the butchers, who will then make their weights true; and be a terror to the market-people for the same reason. Do not shew yourself (though perchance you may be so, but I do not believe it) given to covetousness, to women, or gluttony; for when the town, and those who have to do with you, find your ruling passion, by that they will play their engines upon you, till they have battered you down into the depth of destruction. View and review, consider and reconsider the counsels and documents I gave you in writing, before you went hence to your government, and you will see how you will find in them, if you observe them, a choice supply to help to support you under the toils and difficulties which governors meet with at every turn. Write to your patrons, the duke and duchess, and shew yourself grateful: for ingratitude is the daughter of pride, and one of the greatest sins; and the person who is grateful to those that have done him good, shews thereby that he will be so to God too, who has already done him, and continually doing him, so much good.

ppens to you, since the way is so short. I have
oughts of quitting this idle life very soon; for I
is not born for it. A business has fallen out which
ll, I believe, go near to bring me into disgrace with
e duke and duchess. But though it afflicts me
ich, it affects me nothing: for, in short, I must
mply with the rules of my profession, rather than
th their pleasure, according to the old saying,
nicus Plato, sed magis amica Veritas. I write this
Latin; for I persuade myself you have learned it
ce you have been a governor. And so, farewell,
d God have you in his keeping, that nobody may
y you.

Your friend,
DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA."

Sancho listened with great attention to the letter,
ich was applauded, and looked upon to be very
icious by all that heard it. Presently Sancho rose
m table, and calling the secretary, he shut himself
with him in his chamber, and without any delay,
olved immediately to send an answer to his lord
n Quixote. He bid the secretary, without adding
diminishing a tittle, to write what he should dictate

given you no account of my well or ill being in
government; in which I suffer more hunger t
when we two wandered about through woods
deserts.

"My lord duke wrote to me the other day, gi
me advice that certain spies were come into this isl
to kill me; but hitherto I have been able to disco
no other besides a certain doctor, who has a salar
this place for killing as many governors as shall c
hither. He calls himself doctor Pedro Rezio, and
native of Tirteafuera; a name sufficient to make
fear dying by his hands. This same doctor says,
does not cure distempers when people have them,
prevents them from coming: and the medicines he
are, diet upon diet, till he reduces the patient to
bones; as if a consumption were not a worse mal
than a fever. In short, he is murdering me by hun
and I am dying of despite; for, instead of comin
this government to eat hot, and drink cool, and to
reate my body between Holland sheets, upon beds
down, I am come to do penance, as if I were an hern
and, as I do it against my will, I verily think, at
long run, the devil will carry me away.

"Hitherto I have touched no fee, nor taken
bribe; and I cannot imagine what it will end in;
here I am told, that the governors, who came to
island, before they set foot in it, used to receive a g
sum of money, by way of present or loan, from the p
ple, and that this is the custom with those who g
other governments, as well as with those who come
this.

"One night, as I was going the round, I met a v
handsome damsel in man's clothes, and her brothe
woman's. My sewer fell in love with the girl,
has, as he says, already in his thoughts, made cho
of her for his wife; and I have chosen the brother
my son-in-law. To-day we both intend to disclose
minds to their father, who is one Diego de la Llam
gentleman, and an old christian, as much as one
desire.

"I visit the markets, as your worship advis
and yesterday I found a huckster-woman, who s
hazel-nuts, and it was proved upon her, that
mixed with the new a bushel of old rotten

"As concerning my lady duchess's havin
to my wife Teresa Panza, and sent her th
your worship mentions, I am mighty pleased
and will endeavour to shew my gratitude at
time: pray, kiss her honour's hands in my n
tell her, she has not thrown her favours int
sack, as she will find by the effect.

"I would not wish you to have any cross re
of disgust with our patrons the duke and
for if your worship quarrels with them, it is
must redound to my damage; and since your
advised me not to be ungrateful, it will not be
you should be so yourself, to those who have d
so many favours, and who have entertained yo
erously in their castle.

"The cat-business I understand not, but su
must be one of those unlucky tricks the wic
chanters are wont to play your worship: I sha
more when we meet.

"I would willingly send your worship some
other; but I cannot tell what, unless it be son
clyster-pipes, which they make in this island ve
ously. If my employment holds, I will look
something to send, right or wrong. If my wife

the courier with it immediately. Then thos
carried on the plot against Sancho, contrived
themselves how to put an end to his gover
That evening Sancho spent in making some or
ces for the good government of that which he t
be an island. He decreed, that there should be
nopolisers of provisions in the commonwealth
wines should not be imported indifferently fr
parts the merchant pleased, with this injunctio
they should declare its growth, that a price mi
set upon it according to its goodness, characte
true value; and that whoever dashed it with wa
changed its name, should be put to death for i
moderated the prices of all sorts of hose and sho
pecially the latter, the current price of whi
thought exorbitant. He limited the wages of se
which before were very extravagant.* He lai
severe penalties upon those who should sing las
and indecent songs by day or by night. He d
that no blind man should sing his miracles in
unless he produced an authentic testimony of th
of them, esteeming most of those sung by that
people to be false, in prejudice to the true one
created an overseer of the poor, not to persecute
but to examine whether they were such or no;
der colour of feigned maimness, and counterfei
they are often sturdy thieves, and hale dru
In short, he made such wholesome ordinance
they are observed in that town to this day,
called, The constitutions of the great governor
Panza.

CHAP. XX.

In which is related the adventure of the second ed or distressed matron, otherwise called Rodriguez.

Cid Hamete relates, that Don Quixote, b
healed of his scratches, began to think th

* *Literally*, "travelled unbridled in the
terest."

n head to foot with mourning weeds; and one of
m, coming up to Don Quixote, threw herself at
length on the ground, and, incessantly kissing
feet, poured forth such dismal, deep, and mourn-
groans, that all who heard and saw her were con-
nded: and, though the duke and duchess imagined
was some jest their servants were putting upon
Quixote, yet, seeing how vehemently the woman
ed, groaned, and wept, they were in doubt and
suspense; till the compassionate Don Quixote,
ing her from the ground, prevailed with her to dis-
er herself, and remove the veil from before her
bered face. She did so, and discovered, what
little expected to see, the face of Donna Rodri-
z, the duenna of the house: and the other mourner
her daughter, who had been deluded by the rich
er's son. All that knew her wondered, and the
e and duchess more than any body; for, though
took her for a fool and soft, yet not to the degree
act so mad a part. At length Donna Rodriguez,
ing to her lord and lady, said: Be pleased, your ex-
encies, to give me leave to confer a little with this
leman; for so it behoves me to do, to get success-
out of an unlucky business, into which the pre-
ption of an evil-minded bumpkin has brought me

of good adventures (which God send you!) and the
fore my desire is, that, before you begin making y
excursions on the highways, you would challenge t
untamed rustic, and oblige him to marry my daugh
in compliance with the promise he gave her to be
husband before he had his will of her;* for, to thi
to meet with justice from my lord duke, is to look
pears upon an elm tree, for the reasons I have alre
told your worship in private; and so God grant y
worship much health, not forsaking us.

To which words Don Quixote returned this answ
with much gravity and solemnity: Good madam du
na, moderate your tears, or rather dry them up,
spare your sighs; for I take upon me the charge
seeing your daughter's wrongs redressed; though
had been better if she had not been so easy in beli
ing the promises of lovers, who, for the most part,
very ready at promising, and very slow in performi
and, therefore, with my lord duke's leave, I will dep
immediately in search of this ungracious youth,
will find and challenge him, and will kill him, if he
fuse, to perform his contract: for the principal end
my profession is, to spare the humble, and chastise
proud; I mean, to succour the wretched, and dest
the oppressor.

You need not give yourself any trouble, answe
the duke, to seek the rustic, of whom this good du
na complains; nor need you ask my permission to cl
lenge him: for, suppose him challenged, and leav
to me to give him notice of this challenge, and to m
him accept it, and come and answer for himself at
castle of mine; where both shall fairly enter the li
and all the usual ceremonies shall be observed, and
act justice distributed to each, as is the duty of
princes, who grant the lists to combatants within
bounds of their territories. With this assurance,
with your grandeur's leave, replied Don Quixote,

* The lord of the great tower forced away a dam
niece to *Don Grumedan*: the mother applies to G
lin, now a knight, to redress this wrong: he fig
cavalier, vanquishes him, and makes him sw
will never more take dame or damsel against h
Amadis de Gaul, b. 4,

this time I renounce my gentility, and lessen and mean myself to the lowness of the offender, and myself upon a level with him, that he may be quali to fight with me; and so, though absent, I challe and defy him, upon account of the injury he has d in deceiving this poor girl, who was a maiden, and his fault is no longer such; and he shall either perf his promise of being her lawful husband, or die in dispute. And immediately pulling off his glove, threw it into the middle of the hall, and the duke t it up, saying, that, as he had said before, he acce the challenge in the name of his vassal, appointing time to be six days after, and the lists to be in court of the castle; the arms, those usually am knights, a lance, shield, and laced suit of armour, all the other pieces, without deceit, fraud, or any perstition whatever, being first viewed and exami by the judges of the field. But especially, he sai was necessary the good duenna and the naughty m en should commit the justice of their cause to hands of Signor Don Quixote; for otherwise noth could be done, nor could the said challenge be d executed. I do commit it, answered the duenna. I too, added the daughter, all weeping, abashed, confounded.

The day thus appointed, and the duke having resol with himself what was to be done in the business, mourners went their ways; and the duchess orde that thenceforward they should be treated, not as servants, but as lady-adventurers, who were come her house to demand justice: and so they had a sepa apartment ordered them, and were served as strang to the amazement of the rest of the family, who k not what the folly and boldness of Donna Rodrig and of her ill-errant daughter, drove at.

While they were thus engaged in perfecting the of the feast, and giving a good end to the dinner, hold, there entered at the hall-door the page who carried the letters and presents to Teresa Panza, of the governor Sancho Panza: at whose arrival duke and duchess were much pleased, being desirou know the success of his journey and they having ed him, the page replied, he cou not relate it so licly, nor in few words, and de red their excelle

would be pleased to adjourn it to a private audience, and in the meantime to entertain themselves with those letters; and, pulling out a couple, he put them into the hands of the duchess. The superscription of one was —"For my lady duchess such an one, of I know not what place;" and the other—"To my husband Sancho Panza, governor of the island Barataria, whom God prosper more years than me." The duchess's cake was dough, as the saying is, till she had read her letter; and opening it, she ran it over to herself, and finding it might be read aloud, that the duke and the bystanders might hear it, she read what follows:—

Teresa Panza's letter to the duchess.

"My lady,

"The letter your grandeur wrote me gave me much satisfaction, and indeed I wished for it mightily. The string of corals is very good, and my hus and's hunting-suit comes not short of it. Our whole town is highly pleased that your ladyship has made my husband Sancho a governor; though nobody believes it, especially the priest, and master Nicholas the barber, and Sampson Carrasco the bachelor. But what care I? for so long as the thing is so, as it really is, let every one say what they list: though, if I may own the truth, I should not have believed it myself, had it not been for the corals and the habit; for in this village every body thinks my husband a dunce, and, take him from governing a flock of goats, they cannot imagine what government he can be good for. God be his guide, and speed him as he sees best for his children. I am resolved, dear lady of my soul, with your ladyship's leave, to bring this good day home to my house, and hie me to court, to loll it in a coach, and burst the eyes of a thousand people that envy me already. And, therefore, I beg your excellency to order my husband to send me a little money, and let it be enough; for at court expences are great, bread sells for sixpence, and flesh for thirty maravedis the pound; which is a judgment: and if he is not for my going, let him send me word in time; for my feet are in motion to begin my journey. My gossips and neighbours tell me, that if I *and my daughter* go fine and stately at court, my hu

band will be known by me more than I by him; folks, to be sure, will ask: What ladies are those that coach? and a footman of ours will answer: wife and daughter of Sancho Panza, governor of island Barataria: and in this manner Sancho wil known, and I shall be esteemed, and to Rome* for ry thing.

"I am as sorry as sorry can be, that there has b no gathering of acorns this year in our village; but, all that, I send your highness about half a peck. I w to the mountain to pick and cull them out, one one, and I could find none larger; I wish they had b as big as ostrich egg-

"Let not your po y forget to write to me, I will take care to a dvising you of my hea and of all that sha h advising from this pl where I remain our Lord to preserve honour, and not t . My daughter Sanc and my son kiss y p's hands.

"She, who has n l to see your ladyship t to write to you,

"Your servant,

"TERESA PANZA

Great was the pleasure all received at hearing T sa Panza's letter, especially the duke and duchess, asked Don Quixote, whether he thought it prope open the letter for the governor, which must need most excellent. Don Quixote said, to please them would open it; which he did, and found the cont as follows:—

Teresa Panza's letter to her husband Sancho Pa

"I received your letter, dear Sancho of my s and I vow and swear to you, upon the word catholic christian, that I was within two fing breadth of running mad with satisfaction. Look brother, when I came to hear that you was a gover methought I should have dropped down dead for n joy; for, you know, it is usually said, that sudden

* As head of the world, formerly in temporals *now in spirituals.*

kills as effectually as excessive grief. Your daughter Sanchica could not contain her water, for pure ecstasy. I had before my eyes the suit you sent me, and the corals sent by my lady duchess about my neck, and the letters in my hands, and the bearer of them present; and, for all that, I believed and thought all I saw and touched was a dream: for who could imagine that a goatherd should come to be a governor of islands? You know, friend, my mother used to say, that One must live long to see much. I say this, because, I think to see more, if I live longer: for I never expect to stop till I see you a farmer-general, or a collector of the customs; offices, in which, though the devil carries away him that abuses them, in short, one is always taking and fingering of money. My lady duchess will tell you how I long to go to court: consider of it, and let me know your mind; for I will strive to do you credit there by riding in a coach. The priest, the barber, the bachelor, and even the sexton, cannot believe you are a governor, and say, that it is all delusion, or matter of enchantment, like all the rest of your master Don Quixote's affairs: and Sampson says, he will find you out, and take this government out of your head, and Don Quixote's madness out of his skull. I only laugh at them, and look upon my string of corals, and am contriving how to make our daughter a gown of the suit you sent me. I sent my lady duchess a parcel of acorns: I wish they had been of gold. Prythee, send me some strings of pearl, if they are in fashion in that same island. The news of this town is that the Berrueca is about marrying her daughter to a sorry painter, who is come to this town to paint whatever should offer. The magistrates ordered him to paint the king's arms over the gate of the town-house: he demanded two ducats: they paid him before-hand: he worked eight days, at the end of which he had made nothing of it, and said, he could not hit upon painting such trumpery. He returned the money, and, for all that, he marries under the title of a good workman. It is true, he has already quitted the pencil, and taken the spade, and goes to the field like a gentleman. Pedro de Lobo's son has taken orders, and shaven his crown in order to be a priest. Minguilla, Mingo Silvato niece, has heard of it, and is suing him upon a prom

hold stuff: but now that she is a governi
you will give her a fortune, and she need
it. The pump in our market-place is
thunderbolt fell upon the pillory, and th
all light. I expect an answer to this, an
tion about my going to court. And so
more years than myself, or as many; fo
willingly leave you in this world behind
"Your
TER

The letters caused much laughter, app
and admiration: and, to put the seal to t
rived the courier, who brought that, whic
to Don Quixote; which was also publicly
casioned the governor's simplicity to
doubt. The duchess retired, to learn of
had befallen him in Sancho's village; wl
whole very particularly, without leavi
stance unrecited. He gave her the aco
cheese, which Teresa gave him for a ve
and better than those of Tronchon. Th
ceived it with great satisfaction; and so
them, to relate how ended the governmen

DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.

PART II.—BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Of the toilsome end and conclusion of Sancho za's government.

To think, that in this life the things thereof will tinue always in the same state, is a vain expecta the whole seems rather to be going round, I me a circle. The spring is succeeded by the summe summer by the autumn, the autumn by the winte the winter by the spring again; and thus time round with a continual wheel. Human life only it to its end, swifter than time itself, without ho renewal, unless in the next, which is limited bounds. This is the reflection of Cid Hamete, th hometan philosopher. For many without the lig faith, and merely by natural instinct, have disco the transitory and unstable condition of the pr life, and the eternal duration of that which is to But here our author speaks with respect to the ness, with which Sancho's government ended, p ed, dissolved, and vanished into smoke and a sha

Who being in bed the seventh night of the de his government, not satiated with bread nor win with sitting in judgment, deciding causes, and statutes and proclamations; and sleep, maugre *despite of hunger*, beginning to close his eye *heard so great* a noise of bells and voices, tha

... put on slippers, because
of the floor; and, without putting on
or any thing like it, he went out at hi
and instantly perceived more than
coming along a gallery, with lighted
hands, and their swords drawn, all cryi
arm, my lord governor, arm; for an inf
enemies are entered the island, and we
your conduct and valour do not succou
noise and uproar, they came where Sa
tonished and stupified with what he h
And when they were come up to hin
said: Arm yourself straight, my lord, un
be ruined, and the whole island with you
I to do with arming, replied Sancho, wl
ing of arms or succours? It were better
matters to my master Don Quixote, who
them and secure us in a trice; for, as I
God, I understand nothing at all of the
lies. Alack, signor governor, said anoth
heartedness is this? Arm yourself, sir
bring you weapons offensive and defensi
forth to the market-place, and be our cap
ought to be so, as being our governor.
in God's name, replied Sancho
brought t

their morning-star, their affairs would have a prosperous issue. How should I march, wretch that I am, answered Sancho, when I cannot stir my knee-pans; for I am hindered by these boards, which press so close and hard upon my flesh. Your only way is to carry me in your arms, and lay me athwart, or set me upright at some postern, which I will maintain, either with my lance or my body. Fie, signor governor! quoth another, it is more fear than the targets, that hinders your marching. Have done, for shame, and bestir yourself; for it is late, the enemy increases, the cry grows louder, and the danger presses.

At which persuasions and reproaches the poor governor tried to stir, and down he fell with such violence, that he thought he had dashed himself to pieces. He lay like a tortoise enclosed and covered with his shell, or like a flitch of bacon between two trays, or like a boat with the keel upwards upon the sands. And though they saw him fall, those jesting rogues had not the least compassion on him; on the contrary, putting out their torches, they reinforced the clamour, and reiterated the alarm, with such hurry and bustle, trampling over poor Sancho, and giving him a hundred thwacks upon the targets, that, if he had not gathered himself up, and shrunk in his head between the bucklers, it had gone hard with the poor governor; who, crumpled up in that narrow compass, sweated and sweated again, and recommended himself to God from the bottom of his heart, to deliver him from that danger. Some stumbled, others fell over him; and one there was, who, getting a-top of him, stood there for a good while, and from thence, as from a watch-tower, commanded the troops, and, with a loud voice, cried: This way, brave boys; here the enemy charges thickest; guard that postern; shut yon gate; down with those scaling-ladders; this way with your cauldrons of rosin, pitch, and burning oil; barricado the streets with wool-packs. In short, he named, in the utmost hurry, all the necessary implements and engines of war, used in defence of a city assaulted. The poor battered Sancho, who heard, and bore all, said to himself: Oh, if it were heaven's good pleasure, that this island *were once* lost, and I could see myself, either *dead, or out of this* great strait! Heaven heard th

entreat and beseech some friend, if I have a
me a draught of wine, for I am almost ch
let me dry up this sweat, for I am melting
turning into water. They rubbed him d
brought him wine; they untied the target
down upon his bed, and swooned away with
surprise, and fatigue he had undergone. T
had played him the trick, began to be sorry
laid it on so heavily. But Sancho's coming
moderated the pain they were in at his fain
He asked what o'clock it was: they told h
day-break. He held his peace; and, without
thing more, he began to dress himself, all
silence. They all stared at him in expecta
would be the issue of his dressing himsel
haste.

In fine, having put on his clothes, by little
(for he was so bruised he could not do it h
took the way to the stable, every body prese
ing him: and going to Dapple, he embraced
gave him a kiss of peace on the forehead;
without tears in his eyes, he said: Come h
companion, my friend, and partner in my fat
miseries. When I consorted with thee, and
other thoughts, but the care of mending the

others that were present, he said: Give way, gentlemen, and suffer me to return to my ancient liberty: suffer me to seek my past life, that I may rise again from this present death. I was not born to be a governor, nor to defend islands or cities from enemies that assault them. I better understand how to plow and dig, how to prune and dress vines, than how to give laws, and defend provinces or kingdoms. Saint Peter is well at Rome: I mean that nothing becomes a man so well as the employment he was born for. In my hand a sickle is better than a governor's sceptre. I had rather have my belly full of my own poor porridge,* than be subject to the misery of an impertinent physician, who kills me with hunger; and I had rather lay myself down under the shade of an oak in summer, and equip myself with a double sheep-skin jerkin in winter, at my liberty, than lie, under the slavery of a government, between Holland sheets, and be clothed in sables. Gentlemen, God be with you; and tell my lord duke, that naked was I born, and naked I am; I neither win nor lose; I mean, that without a penny came I to this government, and without a penny do I quit it, the direct reverse of the governors of other islands. Give me way, and let me be gone to plaster myself; for I verily believe all my ribs are broken thanks to the enemies, who have been trampling upon me all night long.

It must not be so, Signor governor, quoth doctor Pedro Rezio; for I will give your lordship a drink, good against falls and bruises, that shall presently restore you to your former health and vigour. And, as to the eating part, I give you my word I will amend that, and let you eat abundantly of whatever you have a mind to. It comes too late, answered Sancho: I will as soon stay as turn Turk. These are not tricks to be played twice. Before God, I will no more continue in this, nor accept of any other government, though it was served up to me in a covered dish, than I will fly to heaven without wings. I am of the race of the Panzas, who are all headstrong; and if they once cry, Odds, odds it shall be, though it be even, in spite of all the

* "*Gazpacho*;" it is made of oil, vinegar, water, salt, and spice, with bread.

grows late. To w
Signor governor, we will let you
with all our hearts, though we shall
lose you; for your judgment, and chri
oblige us to desire your presence; but
every governor is bound, before he lea
has governed, to submit to a judicature
account of his administration. When
has done so for the ten days† you have
ernment, you shall depart, and God's
you. Nobody can require that of me,
cho, but whom my lord duke shall appoi
am going, and to him it shall be given exa
departing naked as I do, there needs s
proof of my having governed like an a
God, the great Sancho is in the right,
Pedro Rezio, and I am of opinion we sh
go; for the duke will be infinitely glad
They all consented, and suffered him to
ing first to bear him company, and to
thing he desired, for the use of his per
conveniency of his journey. Sancho sai
only a little barley for Dapple, and half
half a loaf for himself; for, since the way
he stood in need of nothing more
vision. They all

at his discourse, as at his so resolute and discreet determination.

CHAP. II.

Which treats of matters relating to this history, and to no other.

THE duke and duchess resolved, that Don Quixote's challenge of their vassal, for the cause above-mentioned, should go forward; and, though the young man was in Flanders, whither he was fled to avoid having Donna Rodriguez for his mother-in-law, they gave orders for putting in his place a Gascoon lacquey, called Tosilos, instructing him previously in every thing he was to do. About two days after, the duke said to Don Quixote, that his opponent would be there in four days, and present himself in the lists, armed as a knight, and would maintain, that the damsel lied by half the beard, and even by the whole beard, if she said he had given her a promise of marriage. Don Quixote was highly delighted with the news, and promised himself to do wonders upon the occasion, esteeming it a special happiness, that an opportunity offered of demonstrating to their grandeurs how far the valour of his puissant arm extended; and so with pleasure and satisfaction, he waited the four days, which, in the account of his impatience, were four hundred ages.

Let us let them pass, as we let pass many other things, and attend upon Sancho, who, between glad and sorry, was making the best of his way upon Dapple toward his master, whose company he was fonder of, than of being governor of all the islands in the world. Now he had not gone far from the island of his government (for he never gave himself the trouble to determine whether it was an island, city, town, or village, that he governed) when he saw coming along the road six pilgrims, with their staves, being foreigners. such as ask alms singing; and, as they drew near to him, they placed themselves in a row, and, raising their voices all together, began to sing, in their language, what Sancho could not understand, exce

ıen one of them pulled out of his bosom a purse, t
owed it to Sancho; whence he found, that they a
for money: and he, putting his thumb to his thr
d extending his hand upward, gave them to und
nd, he had not a penny of money: and, spurring
pple, he broke through them; and, as he passed
e of them, who had viewed him with much att
n, caught hold of him, and, throwing his arms ab
waist, with a loud voice, and in very good Cas
, said: God be my aid! what is it I see? Is it p
le I have in my arms my dear friend and good nei
ır Sancho Panza? Yes, certainly I have; for I
ther asleep nor drunk. Sancho was surprised
ır himself called by his name, and to find hims
braced by the stranger pilgrim; and, though
wed him earnestly a good while, without speakin
rd, he could not call him to mind. But the pilgri
ceiving his suspense, said, How! is it possib
ther Sancho Panza, you do not know your neig
r Ricote, the Morisco shopkeeper of your tow
en Sancho observed him more attentively, and
to recollect him, and at last remembered him p
ly; and, without alighting from his beast, he thr
arms about his neck, and said: Who the devil, I
should know you in this disguise?

very good sort of people; and there I shall have an opportunity to tell you what has befallen me since I departed from our village, in obedience to his majesty's proclamation, which so rigorously threatened the miserable people of our nation, as you must have heard.

Sancho consented, and Ricote speaking to the rest of the pilgrims, they turned aside toward the poplar grove, which they saw at a distance, far enough out of the high road. They flung down their staves, and putting off their pilgrim's weeds, remained in their jackets. They were all genteel young fellows, excepting Ricote, who was pretty far advanced in years. They all carried wallets, which, as appeared afterwards, were well provided with incitatives, and such as provoke to thirst at two leagues distance. They laid themselves along on the ground, and making the grass their table-cloth, they spread their bread, salt, knives, nuts, slices of cheese, and clean bones of gammon of bacon, which, if they would not bear picking, did not forbid being sucked. They produced also a kind of black eatable, called Caviere, made of the roes of fish, a great awakener of thirst. There wanted not olives, though dry, and without any sauce, yet savoury and well preserved. But, what carried the palm in the field of this banquet, was, six bottles of wine, each producing one out of his wallet. Even honest Ricote, who had transformed himself from a Moor into a German, or Dutchman, pulled out his, which for bigness might vie with the other five. Now they began to eat with the highest relish, and much at their leisure, dwelling upon the taste of every bit they took upon the point of a knife, and very little of each thing; and straight all together lifted up their arms and their bottles into the air, mouth applied to mouth, and their eyes nailed to the heavens, as if they were taking aim at it, and, in this posture, waving their heads from side to side, in token of the pleasure they received, they continued a good while, transfusing the entrails of the vessels into their own stomachs. Sancho beheld all this, and was nothing grieved thereat; but rather, in compliance to the proverb, he very well knew, When you are at Rome, do as they do at Rome, he demanded *of Ricote the* bottle, and took his aim, as the oth *had done,* and not with less relish. Four times

bottles bore being tilted; but, for the fifth, it was not to be done; for they were now as empty and as dry as a rush, which struck a damp upon the mirth they had hitherto shown. One or other of them, from time to time, would take Sancho by the right hand, and say: Spaniard and Dutchman, all one, goot companion: and Sancho would answer: Goot companion, I vow to gad. And then he burst out into a fit of laughing, which held him an hour, without his remembering at that time any thing of what had befallen him in his government: for cares have commonly but very little jurisdiction over the time that is spent in eating and drinking. Finally, the making an end of the wine, was the beginning of a sound sleep, which seized them all, upon their very board and table-cloth. Only Ricote and Sancho remained awake, having drank less, though eaten more, than the rest. And they two, going aside, sat them down at the foot of a beech, leaving the pilgrims buried in a sweet sleep; and Ricote, laying aside his Morisco, said what follows in pure Castilian.

You well know, O Sancho, my neighbour and friend, how the proclamation and edict, which his majesty commanded to be published against those of my nation, struck a dread and terror into us all: at least into me it did, in such sort, that methought the rigour of the penalty was already executed upon me and my children before the time limited for our departure from Spain. I provided therefore as I thought, like a wise man, who knowing at such a time the house he lives in will be taken from him, secures another to remove to: I say, I left our town, alone, and without my family, to find out a place, whither I might conveniently carry them, without that hurry the rest went away in. For I well saw, as did all the wisest among us, that those proclamations were not bare threatenings, as some pretended they were, but effectual laws, and such as would be put in execution at the appointed time. And what confirmed me in the belief of this, was, my knowing the mischievous, extravagant designs of our people; which were such, that in my opinion, it was a divine inspiration that moved his majesty to put so brave a resolution in practice. Not that we were all culpable; for some of us were steady and true christians: but these were so few they could not be compared with those

that were otherwise; and it is not prudent to nourish a serpent in one's bosom, by keeping one's enemies within doors. In short, we were justly punished with the sentence of banishment; a soft and mild one in the opinion of some, but to us the most terrible that can be inflicted. Wherever we are, we weep for Spain; for, in short, here were we born, and this is our native country. We no where find the reception our misfortune requires. Even in Barbary, and all other parts of Africa, where we expected to be received, cherished, and made much of, there it is we are most neglected and misused. We knew not our happiness till we lost it: and so great is the desire almost all of us have of returning to Spain, that most of those (and they are not a few) who can speak the language like myself, forsake their wives and children, and come back again; so violent is the love they bear it. And it is now I know, and find by experience, the truth of that common saying, Sweet is the love of one's country.

I went away, as I said, from our town: I entered into France; and, though there I met with a good reception, I had a desire to see other countries. I went into Italy, and then into Germany, and there I thought we might live more at liberty, the natives not standing much upon niceties, and every one living as he pleases: for in most parts of it, there is liberty of conscience. I took a house in a village near Augsburgh, but soon left it, and joined company with these pilgrims, who come in great numbers every year into Spain to visit its holy places, which they look upon as their Indies, and a certain gain and sure profit. They travel almost the kingdom over, and there is not a village but they are sure of getting meat and drink in it, and a real at least in money; and, at the end of their journey, they go off with above a hundred crowns clear, which, being changed into gold, they carry out of the kingdom either in the hollow of their staves, or in the patches of their weeds, or by some other slight they are masters of, and get safe into their own country, in spite of all the officers and searchers of the passes and ports where money is registered. Now my design, Sancho, is to carry the treasure I left buried (for, it being without the town, I can do it with the less danger) and write, or go over to my wife and daughter, who I kn

I wonder so is, that my wife and daughter should r
go into Barbary than into France, where they r
have lived as christians.

Look you, Ricote, answered Sancho, that pe
was not at their choice, because John Tiopeyo,
wife's brother, who carried them away, being a
Moor, would certainly go where he thought it be
stay; and I can tell you another thing, which is,
I believe it is in vain for you to look for the m
you left buried, because we had news, that your b
er-in-law, and your wife, had abundance of pearls
a great deal of money in gold, taken from the
not having been registered. That may be, re
Ricote, but I am sure, Sancho, they did not touc
hoard; for I never discovered it to them. as fe
some mischance: and therefore, Sancho, if you w
along with me, and help me to carry it off and
ceal it, I will give you two hundred crowns,
which you may relieve your wants; for you kn
am not ignorant they are many. I would do it
swered Sancho, but that I am not at all covetous
had I been so, I quitted an employment this

two leagues from hence, and it is called the island Ba rataria. Peace, Sancho, quoth Ricote; for islands are out at sea: there are no islands on the main land. No replied Sancho: I tell you, friend Ricote, that I left it this very morning; and yesterday I was in it, gov erning at my pleasure, like any Sagittarius: but for all that, I quitted it, looking upon the office of a gov ernor to be a very dangerous thing. And what have you got by the government? demanded Ricote. I have got, answered Sancho, this experience, to know I am fit to govern nothing but a herd of cattle, and that the riches got in such governments are got at the expense of one's ease and sleep, yea, and of one's sustenance; for, in islands, governors eat but little, especially if they have physicians to look after their health. I understand you not, Sancho, quoth Ricote; and all you say seems to me extravagant; for who should give you islands to govern? are there wanting men in the world, abler than you are, to be governors? Hold your peace, Sancho; recal your senses, and consider whether you will go along with me, as I said, and help me to take up the treasure I left buried; for in truth, it may very well be called a treasure; and I will give you wherewithal to live, as I have already told you. And I have told you, Ricote, replied Sancho, that I will not: be satisfied: I will not discover you, and go your way in God's name, and let me go mine: for I know, that what is well got may meet with disaster, and what is ill got destroys both it and its master.

I will not urge you farther, Sancho, quoth Ricote: but tell me, were you in our town when my wife and daughter, and my brother-in-law, went away? Was I? ay, answered Sancho; and I can tell you, that your daughter went away so beautiful, that all the town went out to see her, and every body said, she was the finest creature in the world. She went away weeping, and embraced all her friends and acquaintance, and all that came to see her, and desired them all to recommend her to God, and to our lady his mother: and thi so feelingly, that she made me weep, who am no gre whimperer: and, in faith, many had a desire to e eal her, and to go and take her away upon the r it the fear of transgressing the king's comman

women seldom or never mingle in love
tians: and my daughter, who, as I belie
ligion more than love, little regarded t
courtship. God grant it, replied Sancho
be very ill for them both: and let me b
Ricote; for I intend to be to-night wi
Don Quixote. God be with you, brothe
Ricote; for my comrades are stirring, an
us also to be on our way. And then t
each other: Sancho mounted his Dappl
leaned on his pilgrim's staff; and so the

CHAP. III.

Of what befel Sancho in the way, and which you have only to se

SANCHO staid so long with Ricote, th
time to reach the duke's castle that d
was arrived within half a league of it, w
somewhat dark and close, overtook him
summer time, it ga him no great conc
struck out of the road, purposing to wai
ing. But his ill luck would have it th

all over, and held his breath, to see if he was sound, or bored through in any part: and finding himself well, whole, and in catholic health, he thought he could never give sufficient thanks to God for the mercy extended to him: for he verily thought he had been beaten into a thousand pieces. He felt also with his hands about the sides of the pit, to see if it was possible to get out of it without help; but he found them all smooth, and without any hold or footing; at which Sancho was much grieved, and especially, when he heard Dapple groan most tenderly and sadly: and no wonder; nor did he lament out of wantonness, being, in truth, not over well situated. Alas! said Sancho Panza then, what unexpected accidents perpetually befal those who live in this miserable world! Who could have thought, that he, who yesterday saw himself enthroned the governor of an island, commanding his servants and his vassals, should to-day find himself buried in a pit, without any body to help him, and without servant or vassal to come to his assistance? Here must I and my ass perish with hunger, unless we die first, he by bruises and contusions, and I by grief and concern. At least I shall not be so happy as my master Don Quixote de la Mancha was, when he descended and went down into the cave of the enchanted Montesinos, where he met with better entertainment than in his own house, and where it seems, he found the cloth ready laid, and the bed ready made. There saw he beautiful and pleasant visions; and here I shall see, I suppose, toads and snakes. Unfortunate that I am! What are my follies and imaginations come to? Hence shall my bones be taken up, when it shall please God that I am found, clean, white, and bare, and those of my trusty Dapple with them; whence, peradventure, it will be conjectured who we were, at least by those who have been informed that Sancho Panza never parted from his ass, nor his ass from Sancho Panza. And I say, miserable we! that our ill luck would not suffer us to die in our own country, and among our friends, where, though our misfortunes had found no remedy, there would not be wanting some to grieve for them, and at our last gasp, to close our eyes. O my companion and my friend! how have I repaid thy good services! forgive me, and

Finally, having passed all that night
tions and complainings, the day came
and splendour whereof Sancho soon p
of all impossibilities the most impossibl
that pit without help. Then he began
cry out aloud, to try if any body could
all his cries were in the desert;* for th
creature in all those parts within hearin
gave himself over for dead. Dapple lay
upwards, and Sancho contrived to ge
legs, though he could scarcely stand:
of his wallet, which had also shared the
fall, a piece of bread, he gave it his beas
take it amiss; and Sancho, as if the
him, said to him, Bread is relief for al
At length he discovered a hole in one
wide enough for a man to creep thr
Sancho, squatting down, crept through
and found it was spacious and large w
could see about him, for a ray of the su
through what might be called the roof
all. He saw also, that it enlarged and e
into another spacious concavity. Whic
served, he came back to where his ass w

quoth he to himself; this, which to me is a mishap, to my master Don Quixote had been an adventure: he would, no doubt, have taken these depths and dungeons for flowery gardens and palaces of Galiana,* and would have expected to issue out of this obscurity by some pleasant meadow. But unhappy I, devoid of counsel, and dejected in mind, at every step expect some other pit, deeper than this, to open on a sudden under my feet, and swallow me downright: Welcome that ill that comes alone. In this manner, and with these thoughts, he fancied he had gone somewhat more than half a league, when he discovered a glimmering light, like that of the day, breaking in, and opening an entrance into what seemed to him the road to the other world. Here Cid Hamete Ben Engeli leaves him and returns to treat of Don Quixote, who, with joy and transport, was waiting for the appointed day of combat with the ravisher of Donna Rodriguez's daughter's honour, resolving to see justice done her, and to take satisfaction for the affront and injury offered her.

It happened then, that riding out one morning, to exercise and assay himself for the business of the combat he was to be engaged in within a day or two, as he was now reining, now running Rosinante, he chanced to pitch his feet so near a pit, that, had he not drawn the reins in very strongly, he must inevitably have fallen into it. At last he stopped him, and fell not; and getting a little nearer, without alighting, he viewed the chasm; and, as he was looking at it, he heard a loud voice within, and listening attentively, he could distinguish and understand, that he who spoke from below, said: Ho, above there; is there any christian that hears me, or any charitable gentleman to take pity of a sinner buried alive, an unfortunate disgoverned governor? Don Quixote thought he heard Sancho Panza's voice; at which he was surprised and amazed; and raising his voice as high as he could, he cried: Who is below there? who is it complains? Who should be here, or who should complain, replied the voice, but the forlorn Sancho Panza, governor, for his sins and for his evil-errantry, of the island Barataria, and late

* *A beautiful* palace of a Moorish princess, the ruin *still to be seen* at or near Toledo.

this world, I shall also be ready to aid
distressed in the other, who cannot help
then, answered the voice, you who speak
master Don Quixote de la Mancha, and
the voice it can be nobody else for
Quixote I am, replied Don Quixote, he
to succour and assist the living and the
necessities. Tell me, then, who thou
amazest me: if you are my squire Sanc
chance to be dead, since the devils have
but through the mercy of God you are
our holy mother the Roman Catholic cl
plications sufficient to deliver you from
are in; and I, for my part, will solicit h
half, as far as my estate will reach: the
and without more ado, tell me who you
God, said the voice, and I swear by the
your worship pleases, signor Don Quixo
cha, that I am your squire Sancho Pan
never was dead in all the days of my
having left my government, for causes
tions that require more leisure to rel
night I fell into this cavern, where I
Dapple with me, who will not let me lie

lord's sake, quoth Sancho, and return speedily; for I connot longer endure being buried alive here, and am dying with fear.

Don Quixote left him, and went to the castle, to tell the duke and duchess what had befallen Sancho Panza; at which they wondered not a little, though they easily conceived how he might fall by the corresponding circumstance of the pit, which had been there time out of mind: but they could not imagine how he had left the government without their having advice of his coming. Finally, they sent ropes and pullies, and, by dint of a great many hands, and a great deal of labour, Dapple and Sancho Panza were drawn out of those gloomy shades to the light of the sun. A certain scholar, seeing him, said: Thus should all bad governors come out of their governments, as this sinner comes out of the depth of this abyss, starved with hunger, wan, and, I suppose, pennyless. Sancho, hearing him, said: It is about eight or ten days, brother murmurer, since I entered upon the government of the island that was bestowed upon me, in all which time I had not my belly full one hour; I was persecuted by physicians, and had my bones broken by enemies; nor had I leisure to make perquisites, or receive my dues; and this being so, as it really is, methinks I deserved not to be packed off in this manner: but, Man proposes, and God disposes; and he knows what is best and fittest for every body; and, As is the reason, such is the season; and, Let nobody say, I will not drink of this water; for, Where one expects to meet with gammons of bacon, there are no pins to hang them on. God knows my mind, and that is enough: I say no more, though I could. Be not angry, Sancho, nor concerned at what you hear, quoth Don Quixote; for then you will never have done: come but you with a safe conscience, and let people say what they will; for you may as well think to baricado the highway, as to tie up the tongue of slander. If a governor comes rich from his government, they say he has plundered it, and, if he leaves it poor, that he has been a good-for-nothing fool. I warrant, answered Sancho, that, for this bout, they will rather take me for a fool than a thief.

In such talk, and surrounded by a multitude of

..., ..., my lord and la
your granduers would have it so, without a
mine, went to govern your island of Ba
which naked I entered, and naked I hav
neither win nor lose: whether I have go
or ill, there are witnesses, who may say
please. I have resolved doubts, and prono
tences, and all the while ready to die with
cause doctor Pedro Rezio, native of Tirte
physician in ordinary to the island and its
would have it so. Enemies attacked us by
though they put us in great danger, the pe
island say, they were delivered, and got
ry, by the valour of my arm; and accordi
say true, so help them God. In short, in t
have summed up the cares and burdens that
brings with it, and find, by my account, that
ders cannot bear them, neither are they
weight for my ribs, or arrows for my qu
therefore lest the government should fors
resolved to forsake the government; and
morning I left the island as I found it, with
streets, houses, and roofs it had before I wen
I borrowed nothing of any body, nor set abo
a purse; and though I thought to have

island only, but even of the whole world. This the being the case, kissing your honour's feet, and imit ting the boys at play, who cry, leap you, and then l me leap, I give a leap out of the government, ar again pass over to the service of my master, Do Quixote: for, after all, though with him I eat m bread in bodily fear, at least I have my belly full : an for my part, so that be well filled, all is one to m whether it be with carrots or partridges.

Here Sancho ended his long speech, Don Quixot fearing all the while he would utter a thousand extr vagancies, and, seeing he had ended with so few, h gave thanks to heaven in his heart. The duke en braced Sancho, and assured him, that it grieved him t the soul he had left the government so soon; but th he would take care he should have some other emplo ment, in his territories, of less trouble and more pr fit. The duchess also embraced him, and ordered h should be made much of; for he seemed to be sorel bruised and in wretched plight.

CHAP. IV.

Of the prodigious and never-seen battle between Do Quixote de la Mancha and the lacquey Tosilo in defence of the duenna Donna Rodriguez' daughter.

THE duke and the duchess repented not of the jes put upon Sancho Panza, in relation to the governmen they had given him; especially since their stewar came home that very day, and gave them a punctua relation of almost all the words and actions Sanch had said and done during that time. In fine, he exag gerated the assault of the island, with Sancho's frigh and departure; at which they were not a little pleased

After this the history tells us, the appointed day o combat, came, and the duke having over and ove again instructed his lacquey Tosilos how he should b *have towards* Don Quixote, so as to overcome h *without killing* or wounding him, commanded that *iron heads should* be taken off their lances, telling

excellency might dispose matters relating to t
ness as he liked best, for he would obey him
thing. The dreadful day being now come,
duke having commanded a spacious scaffol
erected before the court of the castle for the j
the field, and the two duennas, mother and d
appellants; an infinite number of people, fror
neighbouring towns and villages, flocked to
novelty of this combat, the like having nev
heard of in that country, neither by the living
dead.

The first who entered the field and the pale,
master of the ceremonies, who examined the
and walked it all over, that there might be
play, nor any other thing covered to occasio
ling or falling. Then entered the duennas, a
their seats, covered with veils to their eyes a
to their breasts, with tokens of no small conce

Don Quixote presented himself in the l
while after appeared on one side of the place
panied by many trumpets, and mounted upo
sant steed, making the earth shake under l
great lacquey Tosilos, his vizor down, and qu
ned with strong and shining armour. The hor
ed to be a Friselander, well-spread and flea-bitt

lists, and, together with Tosilos, asked the duennas whether they consented, that Don Quixote de la Mancha should maintain their right. They answered that they did, and that, whatever he should do in the case, they allowed it for well done, firm and valid. By this time the duke and duchess were seated in a balcony, over the barriers, which were crowded with an infinite number of people, all expecting to behold this dangerous and unheard-of battle. It was articled between the combatants, that, if Don Quixote should conquer his adversary, the latter should be obliged to marry donna Rodriguez's daughter; and if he should be overcome, his adversary should be at his liberty, and free from the promise the women insisted upon, without giving any other satisfaction. The master of the ceremonies divided the sun equally between them, and fixed each in the post he was to stand in. The drums beat; the sound of the trumpets filled the air; the earth trembled beneath their feet; the hearts of the gazing multitude were in suspense, some fearing, others hoping, the good or ill success of this business. Finally, Don Quixote, recommending himself with all his heart to God our Lord, and to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, stood waiting when the precise signal for the onset should be given. But our lacquey's thoughts were very differently employed; for he thought of nothing but of what I am going to relate.

It seems, while he stood looking at his female enemy, he fancied her the most beautiful woman he had ever seen in his life, and the little blind boy, called up and down the streets Love, would not lose the opportunity offered him of triumphing over a lacqueian* heart, and placing it in the catalogue of his trophies; and so, approaching him fair and softly, without any body's seeing him, he shot the poor lacquey in at the left side with an arrow two yards long, and pierced his heart through and through: and he might safely do it; for love is invincible, and goes in and out where he lists, without being accountable to any body for his actions.

I say then, that, when the signal was given for the onset, our lacquey stood transported, thinking on his

* "Lacayuna" A word made for the purpose.

he had now made the mistress of his liberty, and, th
fore, regarded not the trumpet's sound, as did
Quixote, who had scarce heard it, when, bending
ward, he ran against his enemy, at Rosinante's
speed; and his trusty squire Sancho, seeing hin
forward, cried aloud: God guide you, cream and f
er of knights-errant; God give you, victory, since
have right on your side. And though Tosilos saw
Quixote making towards him, he stirred not a
from his post, but called as loud as he could to
marshal of the field; who coming up to see wha
wanted, Tosilos said: Sir, is not this combat to de
whether I shall marry, or not marry, yonder yo
lady? It is, answered the marshal. Then, quoth
lacquey, my conscience will not let me proceed
farther; and I declare, that I yield myself vanquis
and am ready to marry that gentlewoman immedia
The marshal was surprised at what Tosilos said,
as he was in the secret of the contrivance, he c
not tell what answer to make him. Don Quix
perceiving that his adversary did not come on to m
him, stopped short in the midst of his career.
duke could not guess the reason why the combat
not go forward: but the marshal went and told
what Tosilos had said: at which he was surprised
extremely angry. In the meantime, Tosilos wen
to the place where Donna Rodriguez was, and
aloud: I am willing, madam, to marry your daugh
and would not obtain that by strife and content
which I may have by peace, and without danger
death. The valorous Don Quixote hearing all t
said: Since it is so, I am absolved from my prom
let them be married in God's name, and since God
given her, saint Peter bless her. The duke was
come down to the court of the castle, and, going
to Tosilos, he said: Is it true, knight, that you y
yourself vanquished, and that, instigated by your
orous conscience, you will marry this damsel?
my lord, answered Tosilos. He does very well, qu
Sancho Panza at this juncture; for, What you wo
give to the mouse, give it the cat, and you will h
no trouble. Tosilos was all this while unlacing
helmet, and desired them to help him quickly, for
spirits and breath were just failing him, and he c

not endure to be so long pent up in the straitness of that lodging. They presently unarmed him, and the face of the lacquey was exposed to view. Which Donna Rodriguez and her daughter seeing, they cried aloud: A cheat, a cheat; Tosilos, my lord duke's lacquey, is put upon us instead of our true spouse; justice from God and the king against so much deceit, not to say villany. Afflict not yourselves, ladies quoth Don Quixote; for this is neither deceit nor villany, and, if it be, the duke is not to blame, but the wicked enchanters, who persecute me, and who, envying me the glory of this conquest, have transformed the countenance of your husband into that of this person, who, you say, is a lacquey of the duke's. Take my advice, and, in spite of the malice of my enemies, marry him; for without doubt he is the very man you desire to take for your husband. The duke, hearing this, was ready to vent his anger in laughter, and said: The things which befal Signor Don Quixote are so extraordinary, that I am inclined to believe this is not my lacquey: but let us make use of this stratagem and device; let us postpone the wedding for fifteen days, if you please, and, in the meantime, keep this person, who holds us in doubt, in safe custody: perhaps, during that time, he may return to his pristine figure; for the grudge the enchanters bear to Sigoor Don Quixote cannot surely last so long, and especially since these tricks and transformations avail them so little. O, sir, quoth Sancho, those wicked wretches make it their practice and custom to change things relating to my master from one shape to another. A knight whom he vanquished a few days ago, called the Knight of the Looking-Glasses, was changed by them into the shape and figure of the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, a native of our town, and a great friend of ours; and they have turned my lady Dulcinea del Toboso into a downright country wench: therefore I imagine this lacquey will live and die a lacquey all the days of his life. To which Rodriguez's daughter said: Let him be who he will that demands me to wife, I take it kindly of him; for I had rather be lawful wife to a lacquey, than a cast mistress, and tricked by a gentleman, though he, who abused me is not one. In short, all these accidents and events ended in Tosilos's confinement, till it show

appear what his transformation would come to. The victory was adjudged to Don Quixote by a general acclamation: but the greater part of the spectators were out of humour to find, that the so much expected combatants had not hacked one another to pieces; just as boys are sorry, when the criminal they expected to see hanged, is pardoned, either by the prosecutor, or the court.

The crowd dispersed: the duke and Don Quixote returned to the castle: Tosilos was confined: and Donna Rodriguez and her daughter were extremely well pleased to see, that, one way or other, this business was like to end in matrimony, and Tosilos hoped no less.

CHAP. V.

Which relates how Don Quixote took his leave of the duke, and of what befel him with the witty and wanton Altisidora, one of the duchess's waiting-women.

Don Quixote now thought it high time to quit so idle a life as that he had led in the castle, thinking he committed a great fault in suffering his person to be thus confined, and in living lazily amidst the infinite pleasures and entertainments the duke and duchess provided for him as a knight-errant; and he was of opinion he must give a strict account to God for this inactivity. And therefore he one day asked leave of those princes, that he might depart, which they granted him, with tokens of being mightily troubled that he would leave them. The duchess gave Sancho Panza his wife's letters, which he wept over, and said: Who could have thought, that hopes so great as those conceived in the breast of my wife Teresa Panza, at the news of my government, should end in my returning to the toilsome adventures of my master Don Quixote de la Mancha? Nevertheless I am pleased to find, that my Teresa has behaved like herself, in sending the acorns to the duchess; for, had she not sent them, I had been sorry, and she had showed herself ungrateful. But my comfort is, that this present cannot be

l a bribe; for I was already in possession of the nment, when she sent them: and it is very fitting those who receive a benefit should show them- s grateful, though it be with a trifle. In fine, na- went into the government, and naked am I come of it, and so I can say with a safe conscience h is no small matter) naked I was born, naked I I neither win nor lose. This Sancho spoke in quy on the day of their departure; and Don Quix- allying forth one morning, having taken leave of uke and duchess the night before, presented him- completely armed in the court of the castle. All olks of the castle beheld him from the galleries: uke and duchess also came out to see him. San- vas upon his Dapple, his wallets well furnished, himself highly pleased; for the duke's steward, had played the part of the Trifaldi, had given him le purse with two hundred crowns in gold, to sup- ie occasions of the journey; and this Don Quix- as yet, knew nothing of. Whilst all the folks thus gazing at him, as has been said, among other duennas and damsels of the duchess who beholding him, on a sudden the witty and wan- Altisidora raised her voice, and in a pitious tone,

Stay, cruel knight,
Take not thy flight,
Nor spur thy batter'd jade;
Thy haste restrain,
Draw in the rein,
And hear a love-sick maid.
Why dost thou fly,
No snake am I,
Nor poison those I love?
Gentle I am
As any lamb,
And harmless as a dove.
Thy cruel scorn
Has left forlorn
A nymph, whose charms may vie
With theirs who sport
In Cynthia's court,
Though Venus' self were by.

Three night-caps too,
And garters blue,
That did to legs belong,
Smooth to the sight,
As marble white,
And, faith, almost as strong;
Two thousand groans,
As many moans,
And sighs enough to fire
Old Priam's town,
And burn it down,
Did it again aspire.
Since, fugitive knight, to no purpose I v
Barrabbas's fate still pursue and undo th

May Sancho ne'er
His buttocks bare
Fly-flap, as is his duty;
And thou still want
To disenchant
Dulcinea's injur'd beauty.
May still transform'd,
And still deform'd,
Toboso's nymph remain,
In recompense

May thy disgrace
Fill ev'ry place,
Thy falsehood ne'er be hid,
But round the world
Be tose'd and hurl'd,
From Seville to Madrid.
If, brisk and gay,
Thou sitt'st to play
At Ombre or at Chess,
May ne'er Spadill
Attend thy will,
Nor luck thy movements bless.
Though thou with care
Thy corns dost pare,
May blood the penknife follow;
May thy gums rage,
And naught assuage
The pain of tooth that's hollow.

e, fugitive knight, to no purpose I woo thee,
abbas's fate still pursue and undo thee.

en the afflicted Altisidora was complaining in
nner you have heard, Don Quixote stood be-
g her, and, without answering her a word, turn-
face to Sancho, he said: By the age of your
ors, my dear Sancho, I conjure you to tell me
th: have you taken away the three night-caps
e garters this enamoured damsel mentions? To
Sancho answered: The three night-caps I have:
to the garters, I know no more of them than
n in the moon. The duchess was surprised at
erty Altisidora took; for though she knew her
old, witty, and free, yet not to that degree as to
e upon such freedoms: and, as she knew noth-
this jest, her surprise increased. The duke re-
to carry on the humour, and said: I think it
ot look well, Sir knight, that, having received
an entertainment in this castle of mine, you
dare to carry off three night-caps at least, if not
sel's garters besides: these are indications of
nty heart, and ill become your character. Re
er the garters: if not, I defy you to mortal
, without being afraid that your knavish en-
s should change or alter my face, as they have

as long as I live. This damsel talks
one in love, which is no fault of mi
I have no reason to ask hers, or you
don, whom I beseech to have a bett
and, once again, to give me leave
God, signor Don Quixote, quoth the
so good a journey, that we may con
news of your exploits: and God be
longer you stay the more you incre
breast of the damsels that behold
mine, I will take her to task so sev
forward she shall not dare to transg
or her words. Do but hear one w
rous Don Quixote, and I am silent
which is, that I beg your pardon f
stolen my garters; for, on my cons
have them on: but I was absent in
man who looked for his ass while
back. Did I not tell you, quoth Sa
one at concealing thefts? Had I
en, I had many a fair opportunity f

CHAP. VI.

Shewing how adventures crowded so fast upon Don Quixote, that they trod upon one another's heels.

Don Quixote, seeing himself in the open field, free, and delivered from the courtship of Altisidora, thought himself in his proper element, and that his spirits were reviving in him to prosecute afresh his scheme of knight-errantry; and, turning to Sancho, he said: Liberty, Sancho, is one of the most valuable gifts heaven has bestowed upon men: the treasures which the earth encloses, or the sea covers, are not to be compared with it. Life may, and ought to be risked for liberty, as well as for honour; and, on the contrary, slavery is the greatest evil that can befal us. I tell you this Sancho, because you have observed the civil treatment, and plenty, we enjoyed in the castle we have left. In the midst of those seasoned banquets, those icy draughts, I fancied myself starving, because I did not enjoy them with the same freedom I should have done had they been my own. For the obligations of returning benefits and favours received, are ties that obstruct the free agency of the mind. Happy the man, to whom heaven has given a morsel of bread, without laying him under the obligation of thanking any other for it than heaven itself. Notwithstanding all your worship has said, quoth Sancho, it is fit there should be some acknowledgment on our part for the two hundred crowns in gold, which the duke's steward gave me in a little purse; which, as a cordial, and comfortative, I carry next my heart, against whatever may happen; for we shall not always find castles where we shall be made much of: now and then we must expect to meet with inns, where we may be soundly threshed.

In these, and other discourses, our errants, knight and squire, went jogging on, when, having travelled a little above a league, they espied a dozen men, clad like peasants, sitting at dinner upon the grass, and their cloaks spread under them, in a little green mead ow. Close by them were certain white sheets, a seemed, under which something lay concealed.

were raised above the ground, and stretched out at some little distance from each other. Don Quixote approached the eaters, and, first courteously saluting them, asked them what they had under those sheets? One of them answered: sir, under that linen are certain wooden images, designed to be placed upon an altar we are erecting in our village. We carry them covered, that they may not be sullied, and upon our shoulders, that they may not be broken. If you please answered Don Quixote, I should be glad to see them; for images, that are carried with so much precaution, must doubtless be good ones. Ay, and very good ones too, quoth another, as their price will testify; for, in truth, there is not one of them but stands us in above fifty ducats. And, to convince your worship of this truth, stay but a little while, and you shall see it with your own eyes. And rising up from eating, he went and took off the covering from the first figure, which appeared to be a St. George on horseback, with a serpent coiled up at his feet, and his lance run through its mouth, with all the fierceness it is usually painted with. The whole image seemed to be, as we say, one blaze of gold. Don Quixote seeing it, said: This knight was one of the best errants the divine warfare ever had. He was called Don St. George, and was besides a defender of damsels; let us see this other. The man uncovered it, and it appeared to be that of St. Martin on horseback, dividing his cloak with the poor man. And scarcely had Don Quixote seen it, when he said: This knight also was one of the christian adventurers; and I take it he was more liberal than valiant, as you may perceive, Sancho, by his dividing his cloak with the beggar, and giving him half of it: and doubtless it must have been then winter; otherwise he would have given it him all, so great was his charity. That was not the reason, quoth Sancho: but he had a mind to keep to the proverb, which says: What to give, and what to keep, requires an understanding deep. Don Quixote smiled, and desired another sheet might be taken off, underneath which was discovered the image of the patron of Spain on horseback, his sword all bloody, trampling on Moors, and treading upon heads. And, at sight of it, Don Quixote said: Ay, marry, this is a knight indeed, one of Christ's own squadron. He is

d Don St. Diego the Moor-killer, one of the most
nt saints and knights the world had formerly, or
en has now. Then they removed another sheet,
h covered St. Paul falling from his horse with all
ircumstances that are usually drawn in the pic-
of his conversion. When Don Quixote saw it
sented in so lively a manner, that one would al-
say Christ was speaking to him, and St. Paul an-
ing, he said: This was the greatest enemy the
ch of God our Lord had in his time, and the great-
defender it will ever have; a knight-errant in his
and a stedfast saint in his death; an unweari-
abourer in the Lord's vineyard; a teacher of the
iles; whose school was heaven, and whose profes-
nd master Jesus Christ himself. There were no
images, and so Don Quixote bid them cover them
gain, and said: I take it for a good omen, breth-
to have seen what I have seen: for these saints
knights professed what I profess, which is, the ex-
e of arms: the only difference between them and
s, that they were saints, and fought after a heav-
manner, and I am a sinner, and fight after an
ly manner. They conquered heaven by force of
(for heaven suffers violence*) and I hitherto can-
ell what I conquer by force of my sufferings. But,
l my Dulcinea del Toboso get out of hers, my con-
n being bettered, and my understanding directed
it, I might perhaps take a better course than I do.
hear him, quoth Sancho straight, and let sin be
The men wondered, as well at the figure as at
vords of Don Quixote, without understanding half
he meant by them. They finished their repast,
ed up their images, and taking their leave of Don
ote, pursued their journey.
ncho remained as much in admiration at his mas-
knowledge as if he had never known him before,
ing there was not an history nor event in the
l, which he had not at his finger's ends, and fast-
down to his memory, and he said: Truly master
ne, *if this* that has happened to us to-day may be
f an adventure, it has been one of the sofiest and
est that has befallen us in the whole course of
pregrinations: we are got clear of it without

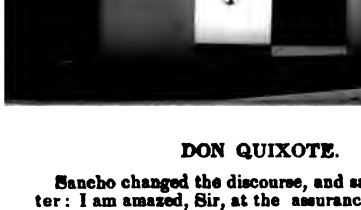
* Matth. xi. 12.

blows, or any heart-beating; we have neither la
hands to our swords, nor beaten the earth with o
dies, nor are we starved with hunger. Blessed b
for letting me see this with my own eyes! Yo
well, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote; but you mus
sider, that all times are not alike, nor do they tal
same course: and what the vulgar commonl
omens, though not founded upon any natural r
a discreet man will yet look upon as lucky encou
One of these superstitious rises and goes abroad
in the morning, and meeting with a friar of the
of the blessed St. Francis, turns his back as if h
met a griffin, and goes home again. Another, a
doza,* spills the salt upon the table, and presentl
ancholy overspreads his heart, as if nature was
to shew signs of ensuing mischances by such trivi
cidents as the afore-mentioned. The wise ma
good christian ought not to pry too curiously in
counsels of heaven. Scipio, arriving in Africa, s
led at jumping ashore; his soldiers took it for
omen; but he, embracing the ground, said: A
thou canst not escape me, for I have thee fast be
my arms. So that, Sancho, the meeting with
images has been a most happy encounter to me.
rily believe it answered Sancho, and I should b
your worship would inform me, why the Spa
when they join battle, invoke that saint Dieg
Moor-killer, and cry, Saint Jago, and close, Spa
Spain, peradventure, so open as to want closin
what ceremony is this? You are a very child, S
answered Don Quixote; for, take notice, God ga
great knight of the red cross to Spain for its patr
protector, especially in those rigorous conflic
Spaniards have had with the Moors; and the
they pray to, and invoke him as their defender
the battles they fight; and they have frequentl
him, visibly overthrowing, trampling down, destr
and slaughtering the Hagarene squadrons;† and
I could produce many examples recorded in th
Spanish histories.

---

* *Probably some family of that name avowed*
perstition here ridiculed.

† *They have a tradition, that the Moors are*
ed from Hagar.



Sancho changed the discourse, and said to his master: I am amazed, Sir, at the assurance of Altisidora, the duchess's waiting woman. He they call Love must surely have wounded her sorely, and pierced her through and through. They say, he is a boy, who, though blear-eyed, or to say better without sight, if he takes aim at any heart, how small soever, he sits and pierces it through and through with his arrows. I have also heard say, that the darts of Love are blunted and rendered pointless by the modesty and reserve of maidens; but, in this same Altisidora, methinks, they are rather whetted than blunted. Look you, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote, Love regards no respects, nor observes any rules of reason in his proceedings, and is of the same nature with death, which assaults the stately palaces of kings, as well as the lowly cattages of shepherds; and, when he takes entire possession of a soul, the first thing he does, is, to divest it of fear and shame; and thus Altisidora, being without both, made an open declaration of her desires, which produced rather confusion, than compassion, in my breast. Notorious cruelty! quoth Sancho; unheard-of ingratitude! I dare say for myself that the least amorous hint of hers would have subdued me, and made me her vassal. O whoreson! what a heart of marble, what bowels of brass, and what a soul of plaster of Paris! But I cannot conceive what it is this damsel saw in your worship, that subdued and captivated her to that degree. What finery, what gallantry, what gaiety, what face; which of these jointly, or severally, made her fall in love with you? for in truth, I have often surveyed your worship, from the tip of your toe to the top of your head, and I see in you more things to cause affright than love. And, having also heard say, that beauty is the first and principal thing that enamours, your worship having none at all, I wonder what the poor thing was in love with. Look you, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, there are two sorts of beauty, the one of the mind, the other of the body. That of the mind, shines and discovers itself in the understanding, in modesty, good behaviour, liberality, and good-breeding: and all these qualities may subsi[illegible] and be found in an illfavoured man; and when the [illegible] at this beauty, and not at that of the body, it pr[illegible]

found himself entangled in some nets
which hung from one tree to another
able to imagine what it might be, he
The business of these nets, Sancho,
one of the newest adventures imagin
if the enchanters, who persecute me,
to entangle me in them, and stop my
of revenge for the rigorous treatmen
ceived from me. But I would have
that, though these nets, as they are
were made of the hardest diamonds, o
that, in which the jealous god of bla
gled Venus and Mars, I would break t
if they were made of bulrushes or yar
was going to pass forward, and break t
expectedly, from among some trees, tw
ful shepherdesses presented themselv
at least they were clad like shepherde
that their waistcoats and petticoats we
cade. Their habits were of rich gol
hair, which for brightness might come
with the rays of the sun, hanging lo
shoulders, and their heads crowned wi
green laurel and red flowergentles inter

an' daughters, neighbours, friends, and relations, should all come to make merry in this place, which is one of the pleasantest in these parts, forming among ourselves a new pastoral Arcadia, and dressing ourselves, the maidens like shepherdesses, and the young men like shepherds. We have got by heart two eclogues, one of the famous poet Garcillasso, and the other of the most excellent Camoens, in his own Portuguese tongue, which we have not yet acted. Yesterday was the first day of our coming hither: we have some field-tents pitched among the trees, on the margin of a copious stream, which spreads fertility over all these meadows. Last night we hung our nets upon these trees, to deceive the simple little birds, which should come at the noise we make, and be catched in them. If, Sir, you please to be our guest, you shall be entertained generously and courteously; for into this place neither sorrow nor melancholy enter.

She held her peace and said no more. To which Don Quixote answered: Assuredly, fairest lady, Actæon was not in greater surprise and amazement, when unawares he saw Diana bathing herself in the water, than I have been in at beholding your beauty. I applaud the scheme of your diversions, and thank you for your kind offers; and, if I can do you any service, you may lay your commands upon me, in full assurance of being obeyed; for my profession is no other than to shew myself grateful, and a benefactor to all sorts of people, especially to those of the rank your presence denotes you to be of: and should these nets, which probably take up but a small space, occupy the whole globe of the earth, I would seek out new worlds, to pass through, rather than hazard the breaking them. And, that you may afford some credit to this exaggeration of mine, behold, he, who makes you this promise, is no less than Don Quixote de la Mancha, if perchance this name has never reached your ears. Ah! friend of my soul! quoth then the other young shepherdess, what good fortune is this that has befallen us? See you this gentleman here before us? I assure you, he is the most valiant, the most enamoured, the most complaisant knight in the word, unless a history, which goes about of him in print, and which I have read, lies and deceives us. I will lay a wager, this honest man

who comes with him, is that very Sancho Panza, squire, whose pleasantries none can equal. Th true, quoth Sancho; I am that same jocular pe and that squire you say; and this gentleman is master, the very Don Quixote de la Mancha afore and historified. Ah! quoth the other, my dear, le entreat him to stay; for our fathers and brothers be infinitely pleased to have him here; for I heard the same things of his valour and wit that tell me: and particularly they say, he is the most stant and most faithful lover in the world; and tha mistress is one Dulcinea del Toboso, who bears a the palm from all the beauties in Spain. And good reason, quoth Don Quixote, unless your ma less beauty brings it into question. But weary yourselves, ladies, in endeavouring to detain me; the precise obligations of my profession will suffe to rest no where.

By this time there came up to where the four st a brother of one of the young shepherdesses: he lso in a shepherd's dress answerable in richness gallantry to theirs. They told him, that the perso saw was the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha, the other, Sancho his squire, of whom he had s knowledge by having read their history. The ga shepherd saluted him, and desired him to come him to the tents. Don Quixote could not refuse, therefore went with him.* Then the nets were dr and filled with a variety of little birds, who, dece by the colour of the nets, fell into the very da they endeavoured to fly from. Above thirty pers genteelly dressed in pastoral habits, were assem together in that place, and presently were made quainted who Don Quixote and his squire were: w was no small satisfaction to them, being alread strangers to his history. They hastened to the te where they found the table spread, rich, plentiful, neat. They honoured Don Quixote with placing at the upper end. They all gazed at him, and adm at the sight. Finally, the cloth being taken a

* *It seems not quite* agreeable to the usual com *sance of Don Quixote*, to grant the gentleman *he had just refused* the ladies.

Don Quixote, with great gravity, raised his voice, a
said :—

Of all the grievous sins men commit, though so
say pride, I say, ingratitude is the worst, adhering
the common opinion, that hell is full of the ungra
ful. This sin I have endeavoured to avoid, as much
I possibly could, ever since I came to the use of r
son; and, if I cannot repay the good offices done
with the like, I place in their stead the desire of do
them: and when this is not enough, I publish the
for he, who tells and publishes the good deeds d
him, would return them in kind if he could; for g
erally the receivers are inferior to the givers, and G
is therefore above all, because he is bountiful ab
all. But though the gifts of men are infinitely disp
portionate to those of God, gratitude in some meas
supplies their narrowness and defects. I then, be
grateful for the civility offered me here, but restrai
by the narrow limits of my ability from making a s
able return, offer what I can, and what is in my pow
and therefore, I say, I will maintain, for two wh
days, in the middle of this the king's highway, wh
leads to Saragossa, that these lady shepherdesses in
guise are the most beautiful and most courteous d
sels in the world,* excepting only the peerless Dulci
del Toboso, the sole mistress of my thoughts; with
offence to any that hear me be it spoken. Sanc
who had been listening to him with great attenti
hearing this, said, with a loud voice: Is it possi
there should be any persons in the world, who presu
to say, and swear, that this master of mine is a m
man? Speak, gentlemen shepherds; is there a co
try vicar, though ever so discreet, or ever so goo
scholar, who can say all that my master has said?
there a knight-errant, though ever so renowned
valour, who can offer what my master has now offer
Don Quixote turned to Sancho, and, with a wrat
countenance, said: Is it possible, O Sancho, there
any body upon the globe, who will say you are no
idiot, lined with the same, and edged with I know

* *It is very common*, in romances, for the k
in honour of their mistresses, to make good
a bridge against all comers, for some days.

what of mischievous and knavish? Who gave you authority to meddle with what belongs to me, and to call in question my folly or discretion? Hold your peace, and make no reply; but go and saddle Rosinante, if he be unsaddled, and let us go and put my offer in execution; for, considering how much I am in the right, you may conclude all those who shall contradict me, already conquered. Then, with great fury, and tokens of indignation, he rose from his seat leaving the company in admiration, and in doubt, whether they should reckon him a madman or a man of sense. In short, they would have persuaded him not to put himself upon such a trial, since they were satisfied of his grateful nature, and wanted no other proofs of his valour, than those related in the history of his exploits. But for all that Don Quixote persisted in his design, and, being mounted upon Rosinante, bracing his shield and taking his lance, he planted himself in the middle of the highway, which was not far from the verdant meadow. Sancho followed upon his Dapple, with all the pastoral company, being desirous to see what would be the event of this arrogant and unheard-of challenge.

Don Quixote being posted, as I have said, in the middle of the road, wounded the air with such words as these: O ye passengers, travellers, knights, squires, people on foot and on horseback, who now pass this way, or are to pass in these two days following, know, that Don Quixote de la Mancha, knight-errant, is posted here, ready to maintain, that the nymphs, who inhabit these meadows and groves, exceed all the world in beauty and courtesy, excepting only the mistress of my soul, Dulcinea del Toboso: and let him, who is of a contrary opinion, come; for here I stand, ready to receive him. Twice he repeated the same words, and twice they were not heard by any adventurer. But fortune, which was disposing his affairs from good to better, so ordered it, that soon after they discovered a great many men on horseback, and several of them with lances in their hands, all trooping in a cluster, and in great haste. Scarcely had they, who were with Don Quixote, seen them, when they turned their backs, and got far enough out of the way, fearing, if they staid, they might be exposed to some danger

Don Quixote alone, with an intrepid heart, stood firm, and Sancho Panza screened himself with Rosinante's buttocks. The troop of lance-men came up, and one of the foremost began to cry aloud to Don Quixote: Get out of the way, devil of a man, lest these bulls trample you to pieces. Rascals, replied Don Quixote, I value not your bulls, though they were the fiercest that Xarama* ever bred upon its banks: confess, ye scoundrels, unsight unseen, that what I have here proclaimed is true; if not, I challenge ye to battle. The herdsmen had no time to answer, nor Don Quixote to get out of the way, if he would: and so the whole herd of fierce bulls and tame kine,† with the multitude of herdsmen, and others, who were driving them to a certain town, where they were to be baited in a day or two, ran over Don Quixote and over Sancho, Rosinante and Dapple, leaving them all sprawling and rolling on the ground. Sancho remained bruised, Don Quixote astonished, Dapple battered, and Rosinante not perfectly sound. But at length they all got up, and Don Quixote, in a great hurry, stumbling here and falling there, began to run after the herd, crying aloud: Hold, stop, ye scoundrels; for a single knight defies you all, who is not of the disposition or opinion of those who say, Make a bridge of silver for a flying enemy. But the hasty runners stopped not the more for this, and made no more account of his menaces than of last year's clouds. Weariness stopped Don Quixote, and, more enraged than revenged, he sat down in the road, expecting the coming up of Sancho, Rosinante, and Dapple. They came up; master and man mounted again, and, without turning back to take their leaves of the feigned or counterfeit Arcadia, and with more shame than satisfaction, pursued their journey.

---

* The bulls of Xarama are accounted the fiercest in Spain.

† "Mansos Cabestros." According to the Royal dictionary, they are old tame oxen, with bells about their necks.

[illegible] the rude encounter
were relieved by a clear and limpid foun
with in a cool grove; on the brink whe
Dapple and Rosinante free, without hal
the way-beaten couple, master and m
down. Sancho had recourse to the cu
wallet, and drew out what he was wont
sauce. He rinsed his mouth, and Don Q
ed his face: with which refreshment the
their fainting spirits. Don Quixote would
out of pure chagrin, nor durst Sancho tou
uals out of pure good manners, expecting
should first be his taster. But seeing hi
away by his imaginations, as to forget to
his mouth, he said nothing, but breaking
kind of ceremony, began to stuff his hungry
the bread and cheese before him. Eat, fri
said Don Quixote, and support life, which
importance to you than to me, and leave m
the hands of my reflections, and by the f
misfortunes. I, Sancho, was born to live
you to die eating; and, to shew you that I
truth, consider me printed in histories, r
arms, courteous in my actions, respected
courted by damsels; and [illegible]
palms [illegible]

rather to imitate the shoemaker, who pulls the leather with his teeth, till he stretches it to what he would have it. I will stretch my life by eating, till it reaches the end heaven has allotted it; and let me tell you, sir, there is no greater madness, than to despair as you do: believe me, and, after you have eaten, try to sleep a little upon the green mattress of this grass, and you will see, when you awake, you will find yourself much eased. Don Quixote complied, thinking Sancho reasoned more like a philosopher than a fool; and he said: If, O Sancho, you would now do for me, what I am going to tell you, my comforts would be more certain, and my sorrows not so great: and it is this, that while I, in pursuance of your advice, am sleeping, you will step a little aside from hence, and with the reins of Rosinante's bridle, turning up your flesh to the sky, give yourself three or four hundred lashes, in part of the three thousand and odd, you are bound to give yourself for the disenchantment of Dulcinea; for it is a great pity the poor lady should continue under enchantment through your carelessness and neglect. There is a great deal to be said as to that, quoth Sancho: for the present, let us both sleep, and afterwards God knows what may happen. Pray, consider, sir, that this same whipping one's self in cold blood is a cruel thing, and more so, when the lashes light upon a body ill sustained and worse fed. Let my lady Dulcinea have patience; for, when she least thinks of it, she shall see me pinked like a sieve by dint of stripes; and, Until death all is life: I mean, I am still alive, together with the desire of fulfilling my promise. Don Quixote thanked him, eat a little, and Sancho much; and both of them addressed themselves to sleep, leaving Rosinante and Dapple, those inseparable companions and friends, at their own discretion, and without any controul, to feed upon the plenty of grass, with which that meadow abounded.

They awoke somewhat of the latest; they mounted again, and pursued their journey, hastening to reach an inn, which seemed to be about a league off: I say an *inn, because* Don Quixote called it so, contrary *his custom of* calling all inns castles. They arrive *it, and demanded* of the host if he had any lod *He answered*, he had, with all the convenienc

... they betook them t
... Sancho asked the host, what he ha
for supper. The host answered, his mo
measured, and he might call for whateve
for the inn was provided, as far as birds of
of the earth, and fishes of the sea could g
no need of quite so much, answered Sanc
but a couple of chickens, and we shall h
for my master is of a nice stomach, and I a
ton. The host replied, he had no chick
kites had devoured them. Then order a
nor host, quoth Sancho, to be roasted; bu
be tender. A pullet? my father! answere
truly, truly, I sent above fifty yesterday to
be sold: but, excepting pullets, ask for wh
will. If it be so, quoth Sancho, veal or kid
wanting. There is none in the house at p
swered the host; for it is all made an end of
week there will be enough and to spare.
much the nearer for that, answered Sancho:
a wager, all these deficiencies will be made
superabundance of bacon and eggs. Before
swered the host, my guest has an admirable
him: I told him I had neither pullets nor he
would have me have eggs: talk of oth
ask no more f

that I like better; and I care not a fig what
ey are, so they are not hoofs. Nobody shall
em, quoth the host; for some other guests in
e, out of pure gentility, bring their own cook,
iterer, and their provisions with them. If
be the business, quoth Sancho, nobody is
gentleman than my master; but the calling
allows of no catering nor butlering: alas; we
down in the midst of a green field, and fill our
ith acorns, or medlars. This discourse San-
with the inn-keeper, Sancho not caring to
im any farther; for he had already asked him
calling or employment his master was.
r-time being come, Don Quixote withdrew to
ber: the host brought the flesh-pot just as it
fairly set himself down to supper. It seems
ext room to that where Don Quixote was, and
only by a partition of lath, Don Quixote heard
y say: By your life, signor Don Jeronimo,
pper is getting ready, let us read another chap-
e second part of Don Quixote de la Mancha.
had Don Quixote heard himself named, when
tood, and, with an attentive ear, listened to
course, and heard the aforesaid Don Jeronimo
Why signor Don John, would you have us
h absurdities? for he who has read the first
he history of Don Quixote de la Mancha, can-
ibly be pleased with reading the second. But
at, said Don John, it will not be amiss to read
here is no book so bad, but it has something
it. What displeases me most in it is, that the
escribes Don Quixote as no longer in love with
a del Toboso. Which Don Quixote overhear-
of wrath and indignation, he raised his voice,
: Whoever shall say, that Don Quixote de la
has forgotten, or can forget, Dulcinea del To-
vill make him know, with equal arms, that he
vide of the truth: for the peerless Dulcinea
her be forgotten, nor is Don Quixote capable
ting: his motto is Constancy, and his profes-
preserve it with sweetness, and without do-
If any violence. Who is it that answers us
ne in the other room. Who should it'
cho, but Don Quixote de la Mancha him

ıy, maugre and in despite of him,
ed to usurp your name, and annih
as the author of this book I here
And putting a book that his comp
Don Quixote's hands, he took it, a
ing a word, began to turn over the
ently after returned it, saying: I
seen I have found three things in t
serve reprehension. The first is, s
read in the preface: the next, that
ragonian; for he sometimes writes
and the third, which chiefly convict
is, that he errs, and deviates from t
cipal point of the history. For her
wife of my squire Sancho Panza is
tierrez, whereas that is not her name
za; and he who errs in so principal
well be supposed to be mistaken in t
tory.* Here Sancho said: Prettily
this same historian! he must be wel
of our adventures, since he calls
wife, Mary Gutierrez. Take the b
see whether I am in it, and whethe
my name. By what I have heard
quoth Don

Panza, Don Quixote's squire. I am so, answere
cho and value myself upon it. In faith then, sa
gentleman, this modern author does not treat yo
that decency which seems agreeable to your p
He describes you a glutton, and a simpleton, an
at all pleasant, and a quite different Sancho from
described in the first part of your master's his
God forgive him, quoth Sancho; he might have
me alone in my corner, without remembering m
all: for, Let him who knows the instrument play
it; and, Saint Peter is no where so well as at Ro
The two gentlemen desired of Don Quixote, that
would step to their chamber, and sup with them:
they knew very well, there was nothing to be had
that inn, fit for his entertainment. Don Quixote, w
was always courteous, condescended to their reque
and supped with them. Sancho stayed behind wi
the flesh-pot, "cum mero mixto imperio;"* he place
himself at the head of the table, and by him sat dow
the inn-keeper, as fond of the calves-feet, or cow-heels
as he.

While they were at supper, Don John asked Don
Quixote, what news he had of the lady Dulcinea del
Toboso; whether she was married; whether yet
brought to bed, or with child; or if, continuing a maid-
en, she still remembered, with the reserve of her mod-
esty and good decorum, the amorous inclinations of
signor Don Quixote. To which our knight replied:
Dulcinea is still a maiden, and my inclinations more
constant that ever; our correspondence upon the old
foot, and her beauty transformed into the visage of a
coarse country-wench. Then he recounted every par-
ticular of enchantment of the lady Dulcinea, and what
had befallen him in Montesinos's cave, with the direc-
on the sage Merlin had given him for her disenchant-
ent, namely, by Sancho's lashes. Great was the sat-
faction the two gentlemen received to hear Don
ixote relate the strange adventures of his history,

That is, with a deputed or subordinate power. "Me-
imperium," according to the civilians, is that w
ng in the sovereign: "Merum mixtum imperiu
at *delegated* to vassals or magistrates in ca
or criminal.

I should eat a good meal together:
say, he calls me glutton, he may n
too. Ay, marry, does he, quoth D
do not remember after what mann
the expressions carried but an ill s
into the bargain, as I see plainly by
honest Sancho here present. Beli
quoth Sancho, that the Sancho a
that history are not the same with
composed by Cid Hamete Ben Eng
master, valiant, discreet, and in l
and pleasant, and neither a glutton
believe it, quoth Don John, and if
should be ordered, that none shoul
matters relating to Don Quixote, b
his first author; in like manner
manded, that none should dare to d
Apelles. Draw me who will, sai
let him not abuse me:* for patienc
it is overladen with injuries. No
can be offered signor Don Quixote

from every thing filthy an obscene. They asked h
which way he intended to bend his course? He answ
ed, to Saragossa, to be present at the justs for the s
of armour, which are held every year in that city. D
John told him, how the new history related, that D
Quixote, whoever he was, had been there at the r
ning at the ring; and that the description thereof w
defective in the contrivance, mean and low in the sty
miserably poor in devices, and rich only in simplicit
For that very reason, answered Don Quixote, I w
not set a foot in Saragossa, and so I will expose to t
world the falsity of this modern historiographer, and
people will plainly perceive, I am not the Don Quix
he speaks of. You will do very well, said Don Jero
mo, and there are to be other justs at Barcelona, wh
signor Don Quixote may display his valour. It is
intention so to do, quoth Don Quixote, and, gentlem
be pleased to give me leave (for it is time) to go to b
and place me among the number of your best frie
and faithful servants. And me too, quoth Sanch
perhaps I may be good for something. Having t
taken leave of one another, Don Quixote and Sanc
retired to their chamber, leaving Don John and D
Jeronimo in admiration at the mixture he had disc
ered of wit and madness: and they verily belie
these were the true Don Quixote and Sancho, and
those described by the Arragonese author. Don Qu
ote got up very early, and, tapping at the partition
the other room, he again bid his new friends adie
Sancho paid the inn-keeper most magnificently, a
advised him to brag less of the provision of his inn,
to provide it better.

CHAP. VIII.

Of what befel Don Quixote in his way to Barcelo

THE morning was cool, and the day promised
so too, when Don Quixote left the inn, first info
himself which was the directest road to Bar
without touching at Saragossa; so great was
sire to give the lie to that new historian, wh
said, had abused him so much. Now it happ

gates of sleep. But Don Qu
tions, much more than hunger,
not close his eyes: on the cont
thought to and from a thousand
himself in Montesinos's cave; r
nea, transformed into a countr
her ass at a spring; the next mo
ing the words of the sage Merl
conditions to be observed, and
for the disenchantment of Dulc
run mad, to see the carelessne
his squire Sancho, who, as he b
self five lashes only; a number
ate to the infinite still behind: r
so much chagrin and indignati
to himself: If Alexander the
knot, saying, To cut is the san
came nevertheless, universal lor
neither more nor less, may hap
chantment of Dulcinea, if I
whether he will or no: for, if th

in part, the debt you stand engaged for. Dulcinea is perishing; you live unconcerned; I am dying with desire; and therefore untruss of your own accord, for I mean to give you, in this solitude, at least two thousand lashes. Not so quoth Sancho; pray, be quiet, or, by the living God, the deaf shall hear us. The lashes I stand engaged for must be voluntary, and not upon compulsion; and, at present, I have no inclination to whip myself: let it suffice, that I give your worship my word to flog and flay myself, when I have a disposition to it. There is no leaving it to your courtesy, Sancho, said Don Quixote; for you are hard-hearted, and, though a peasant, of very tender flesh. Then he struggled with Sancho, and endeavoured to untruss him. Which Sancho Panza perceiving, he got upon his legs, and, closing with his master, he flung his arms about him, and tripping up his heels, he laid him flat on his back, and, setting his right knee upon his breast, with his hands he held both his master's so fast, that he could neither stir nor breathe. Don Quixote said to him: How, traitor! do you rebel against your master and natural lord? Do you lift up your hand against him who feeds you? I neither make, nor unmake kings, answered Sancho: I only assist myself, who am my own lord. If your worship will promise me to be quiet, and not meddle with whipping me for the present, I will let you go free, and at your liberty: if not, here thou diest, traitor, enemy to Donna Sancha. Don Quixote promised him he would, and swore, by the life of his thoughts, he would not touch a hair of his garment, and would leave the whipping himself entirely to his own choice and free will, whenever he was so disposed.

Sancho got up, and went aside some little distance from thence; and, leaning against a tree, he felt something touch his head, and, lifting up his hands, he felt a couple of feet dangling, with hose and shoes. He fell a trembling with fear; he went to another tree, and the like befel him again: he called out to Don Quixote for help. Don Quixote, going to him, asked him what the matter was, and what he was frightened at. Sancho answered, that all those trees were full of men *legs and feet.* Don Quixote felt them, and immediately guessed what it was, and said to Sancho; You

not be afraid; for what you feel, without seeing, are, doubtless, the feet and legs of some robbers and banditti, who are hanged upon these trees: for here the officers of justice hang them, when they can catch them, by twenties and thirties at a time, in clusters: whence I guess I am not far from Barcelona. And, in truth, it was as he imagined.

And now, the day breaking, they lifted up their eyes, and perceived, that the clusters hanging on those trees were so many bodies of banditti: and, if the dead had scared them, no less were they terrified by above forty living banditti, who surrounded them unawares, bidding them, in the Catalan tongue, be quiet and stand still, till their captain came. Don Quixote was on foot, his horse unbridled, his lance leaning against a tree, and, in short, defenceless; and therefore he thought it best to cross his hands, and hang his head, reserving himself for a better opportunity and conjuncture. The robbers fell to rifling Dapple, and stripping him of every thing he carried in the wallet or the pillion; and it fell out luckily for Sancho, that he had secured the crowns given him by the duke, and those he brought from home, in a belt about his middle. But, for all that, these good folks would have searched and examined him, even to what lay hid between the skin and the flesh, had not their captain arrived just in the nick. He seemed to be about thirty-four years of age, robust, above the middle size, of a grave aspect, and a brown complexion. He was mounted upon a puissant steed, clad in a coat of mail, and armed with two case of pistols, or firelocks. He saw, that his squires (for so they call men of that vocation) were going to plunder Sancho Panza: he commanded them to forbear, and was instantly obeyed, and so the girdle escaped. He wondered to see a lance standing against a tree, a target on the ground, and Don Quixote in armour and pensive, with the most sad and melancholy countenance, that sadness itself could frame. He went up to him, and said: Be not so dejected, good sir; for you are not fallen into the hands of a cruel Osiris, but into those of Roque Guinart, who is more compassionate than cruel. My dejection, answered Don Quixote, is not upon account of my having fallen into your hands, O valorous Roque, whose renown no

bounds on earth can limit, but for being so careless, that your soldiers surprised me, my horse unbridled whereas I am bound, by the order of knight-errantry, which I profess, to be continually upon the watch, and at all hours, my own centinel: for, let me tell you, illustrious Roque, had they found me on horseback, with my lance and my target, it had not been very easy for them to have made me surrender: for I am Don Quixote de la Mancha, he, of whose exploits the whole globe is full. Roque Guinart presently perceived, that Don Quixote's infirmity had in it more of madness than valour; and, though he had sometimes heard him spoken of, he never took what was published of him for truth, nor could he persuade himself, that such a humour should reign in the heart of man: so that he was extremely glad he had met with him, to be convinced near at hand of the truth of what he heard at a distance; and therefore he said to him: Be not concerned, valorous knight, nor look upon this accident as a piece of sinister fortune; for it may chance, among these turnings and windings, that your crooked lot may be set to rights; for heaven, by strange, unheard-of ways, and by men unimagined, raises those that are fallen, and enriches those that are poor.

Don Quixote was just going to return him thanks, when they heard behind them a noise like that of a troop of horses; but it was occasioned by one only, upon which came, riding at full speed, a youth, seemingly about twenty years of age, clad in green damask with a gold lace trimming, trowsers, and a loose coat; his hat cocked in the walloon fashion, with strait waxed boots, and his spurs, dagger, and sword gilt; a small carabine in his hand, and a brace of pistols by his side. Roque turned about his head at the noise, and saw this handsome figure, which, at coming up to him, said: In quest of you I come, O valorous Roque, hoping to find in you, if not a remedy, at least some alleviation of my misfortune; and, not to keep you in suspense, because I perceive you do not know me, I will tell you who I am. I am Claudia Jeronima, daughter of Simon Forte, your singular friend, and particular enemy to Clauquel Torellas, who is also yours, being of the *contrary faction*: and you know, that this Torellas *has a son*, called Don Vincente de Torellas,

any farther. Yesterday I was i
ting his obligations to me, he ha
to another, and, this morning, w
ed. This news confounded me, a
and, my father happening to be
opportunity of putting myself i
me in, and, spurring this horse,
cente about a league from hence
reproaches, or hearing excuses, I
bine, and this pair of pistols into
believe, lodged more than a brac
opening a door, through which
in his blood, might issue out.
servants, who durst not, or coul
defence. I am come to seek yo
I may escape to France, where
to entreat you likewise to prote
numerous relations of Don Vinc
take a cruel revenge upon him.

Roque, surprised at the gallant
and accident of the beautiful

MICHIGAN

his true shape into that of a lacquey, at this very hour that same maiden would not have been one.

Roque, who was more intent upon Claudia's business than the reasoning of master and man, understood them not; and commanding his squires to restore to Sancho all they had taken from Dapple, ordering them likewise to retire to the place where they had lodged the night before, he presently went off with Claudia, in all haste, in quest of the wounded or dead Don Vincente. They came to the place where Claudia had come up with them, and found nothing there but blood newly spilt; then, looking round about them, as far as they could extend their sight, they discovered some people upon the side of a hill, and guessed (as indeed it proved) that it must be Don Vincente, whom his servants were carrying off, alive or dead, in order either to his cure or his burial. They made all the haste they could to overtake them; which they easily did, the others going but softly. They found Don Vincente in the arms of his servants, and with a low and feeble voice, desiring them to let him die there, for the anguish of his wounds would not permit him to go any further. Claudia and Roque, flinging themselves from their horses drew near. The servants were startled at the sight of Roque, and Claudia was disturbed at that of Don Vincente: and so, divided betwixt tenderness and cruelty, she approached him, and taking hold of his hand, she said: If you had given me this, according to our contract, you had not been reduced to this extremity. The wounded cavalier opened his almost closed eyes; and, knowing Claudia, he said: I perceive, fair and mistaken lady, that to your hand I owe my death; a punishment neither merited by me, nor due to my wishes; for neither my desires nor my actions could or would offend you. Is it not true then, said Claudia, that, this very morning, you were going to be married to Leonora, daughter of the rich Balvastro? No, in truth, answered Don Vincente: my evil fortune must have carried you that news, to excite your jealousy to bereave me of life, which since I leave in your hands and between your arms, I esteem myself happy and to assure you of this truth, take my hand, and *ceive me* for your husband, if you are willing; *can give* you no greater satisfaction for the injur *imagine* you have received.

Claudia pressed his hand, and so wrung her own heart, that she fell into a swoon upon the bloody bosom of Don Vincente, and he into a mortal paroxysm. Roque was confounded, and knew not what to do. The servants ran for water to fling in their faces, and bringing it, sprinkled them with it. Claudia returned from her swoon, but not Don Vincente from his paroxysm; for it put an end to his life: which Claudia seeing, and being assured that her sweet husband was no longer alive, she [illegible] her sighs, wounded the heavens wi[illegible] tore her hair, and gave it to t[illegible] r face with her own hands, with [illegible] d affliction that can be imagine[illegible] orrowful heart. O cruel and inconsi[illegible] aid she: with what facility wert thou [illegible] evil a thought in execution! O raging force of jealousy, to what a desperate end dost thou lead those who harbour thee in their breasts! O my husband! whose unhappy lot, for being mine, hath sent thee, for thy bridal bed, to the grave! Such and so great were the lamentations of Claudia, that they extorted tears from the eyes of Roque, not accustomed to shed them upon any occasion. The servants wept; Claudia fainted away at every step, and all around seemed to be a field of sorrow, and seat of misfortune. Finally, Roque Guinart ordered Don Vincente's servants to carry his body to the place where his father dwelt, which was not far off, there to give it burial. Claudia told Roque, she would retire to a nunnery, of which an aunt of hers was abbess; where she designed to end her life in the company of a better and an eternal spouse. Roque applauded her good intention, and offered to bear her company whithersoever she pleased, and to defend her father against Don Vincente's relations, and all who should desire to hurt him. Claudia would by no means accept of his company, and, thanking him for his offer in the best manner she could, took her leave of him weeping. Don Vincente's servants carried off his body, and Roque returned to his companions. Thus ended the loves of Claudia Jeronima: and no wonder, since the web of her doleful history was woven by the cruel *and irresistible hand of* jealousy.

Roque Guinart found his squires in the place

appointed them, and Don Quixote among them, mount ed upon Rosinante, and making a speech, wherein he was persuading them to leave that kind of life, so dan gerous both to soul and body. But, most of them being Gascons, a rude and disorderly sort of people, Don Quixote's harangue made little or no impression upon them. Roque, being arrived, demanded of Sancho Panza, whether they had returned and restored him all the moveables and jewels his folks had taken from Dapple. Sancho answered, they had, all but three night-caps, which were worth three cities. What does the fellow say? quoth one of the by-standers: I have them, and they are not worth three reals. That is true, quoth Don Quixote; but my squire values them at what he has said, for the sake of the person who gave them. Roque Guinart ordered them to be restored that moment, and, commanding his men to draw up in a line, he caused all the clothes, jewels, and money, and, in short, all they had plundered since the last distribution, to be brought before them; and making a short appraisement, and reducing the undivideables into money, he shared it among his company, with so much equity and prudence, that he neither went beyond nor fell the least short of distributive justice. This done, with which all were paid, contented, and satisfied, Roque said to Don Quixote: If this punctuality were not strictly observed, there would be no living among these fellows. To which Sancho said: By what I have seen, justice is so good a thing, that it is necessary even among thieves themselves. One of the squires hearing him, lifted up the but-end of a musket, and had doubtless split Sancho's head therewith, had not Roque Guinart called out aloud to him to forbear. Sancho was frightened, and resolved not to open his lips while he continued among those people.

At this juncture came two or three of the squires, who were posted as centinels on the highway, to observe travellers, and give notice to their chief of what passed, and said to him: Not far hence, sir, in the *road that leads* to Barcelona, comes a great com *any of people.* To which Roque replied: Have ye *stinguished* whether they are such as seek us, *ch as we seek?* Such as we seek, answered *tire. Then* sally forth, replied Roque, and *m hither* presently, without letting one escap

They obeyed, and Don Quixote, Sancho, remaining by themselves, stood expectin squires would bring; and, in this interval, to Don Quixote: This life of ours n seem very new to signor Don Quixote; tures, new accidents, and all of them full nor do I wonder it should appear so to you fess truly to you, there is no kind of life m nor more full of alarms than ours. I was by I know not what desire of revenge, whi enough to disturb the most sedate minds. rally compassionate and good natured: bu said, the desire of revenging an injury d bears down this good inclination in me, that in this state, in spite of knowing better: a mischief draws after it another*, and one si ed by a second, my revenges have been so gether, that I not only take upon me m those of other people. But it pleases though I see myself in the midst of this la confusions, I do not lose the hope of gettin and arriving at last in a safe harbour.

Don Quixote was in admiration to hear such good and sound sense; for he th amongst those of his trade of robbing, mur way-laying, there could be none capable of flection, and he answered, Signor Roque, th of health consists in the knowledge of the and in the patient's being willing to take cines prescribed him by the physician. Y you know your disease: and heaven, or who is our physician, will apply medicines such as usually heal gradually, by little an not suddenly, and by miracle. Besides, good understanding are nearer to amend foolish ones; and since, by your discourse shewn your prudence, it remains only that good cheer, and hope for a bettering of science; and, if you would shorten the way

*Literally, "One abyss calls to another scripture phrase, borrowed from Psalm xliii. calleth unto deep," or, according to the c "*One deep calleth* unto another."

yourself with ease in that of your salvation, come v
me, and I will teach you to be a knight-errant;
which profession there are so many troubles and di
ters, that, being placed to the account of pena
they will carry you to heaven in two twinklings o
eye. Roque smiled at Don Quixote's counsel
whom, changing the discourse, he related the trag
adventure of Claudia Jeronima, which extrem
grieved Sancho, who did not dislike the beauty, f
dom, and sprightliness of the young lady.

By this time the squires returned with their p
bringing with them two gentlemen on horseback,
pilgrims on foot, and a coach full of women,
about six servants, some on foot and some on horseb
accompanying them, and two muleteers belongin
the gentlemen. The squires enclosed them ro
the vanquishers and vanquished keeping a profo
silence, waiting till the great Roque should speak,
asked the gentlemen who they were, whither
were going, and what money they had. One of t
answered: Sir, we are two captains of Spanish f
our companies are at Naples, and we are going to
bark in four galleys, which are said to be at Barcel
with orders to pass over to Sicily. We have a
two or three hundred crowns, with which we t
ourselves rich and happy, since the usual penur
soldiers allows no greater treasures. Roque put
same question to the pilgrims, who replied, they
going to embark for Rome, and that, between t
both, they might have about sixty reals. He dema
also, who those were in the coach, where they
going, and what money they carried; and one of t
on horseback answered: The persons in the coach
my lady Donna Guiomar de Quinones, wife of th
gent of the vicarship of Naples, a little daughte
waiting-maid, and a duenna. Six servants of us
company them; and the money they carry is six
dred crowns. So that, quoth Roque Guinart, we
here nine hundred crowns and sixty reals: my
diers are sixty: see how much it comes to a-piece
I am but an indifferent accomptant.

The robbers hearing him say this, lifted
voices, saying, Long live Roque Guinart, in
all the wretches who seek his destruction.

to satisfy this squadron of my r
bot must eat that sings for hi
may depart free and unmoleste
give you, that if you meet with
rons, which I keep in several di
these parts, they may not hurt
intention to wrong soldiers, nor
if she be of quality. Infinite an
the thanks the captains returned
sy and liberality; for such they
them part of their own money.
Quinones was ready to throw he
to kiss the feet and hands of the
would in no wise consent to it, l
don for the injury he was forced
pliance with the precise duty
The lady regent ordered one of
ately to give the eighty crowns,
sessment, and the captains had a
sixty. The pilgrims were going t
but Roque bid them stay a littl

tch spoke not so low but Roque overheard drawing his sword, he almost cleft his head aying: Thus I chastise the ill-tongued and ıll the rest were frightened, and no one durst ord; such was the awe and obedience they l in. Roque went a little aside, and wrote a ı friend of his at Barcelona, acquainting him ımous Don Quixote de la Mancha, that knight- whom so many things were reported, was in ıny; giving him to understand, that he was ıntest and most ingenious person in the world; four days after, on the feast of Saint John the ıe would appear on the strand of the city, all points, mounted on his horse Rosinante, quire Sancho upon an ass; desiring him to :e thereof to his friends the Niarri, that they ke themselves merry with him: and express- ishes, that his enemies the Cadelli might not f the diversion; though that was impossible, he wild extravagances and distraction of Don together with the witty sayings of his squire 'anza, could not fail to give general pleasure world. He dispatched this epistle by one of :s, who changing the habit of an outlaw for peasant, entered into Barcelona, and deliver- the hands of the person it was directed to.

CHAP. IX.

befel Don Quixote at his entrance into Bar-, with other events, more true than ingenious.

ε days and three nights Don Quixote stayed ıue: and, had he stayed three hundred years, not have wanted subject matter for observa- admiration in his way of life. Here they ere they dine: one while they fly, not know- whom; another, they lie in wait they know rhom. They slept standing, with interrupted and shifting from one place to another; the petually sending out spies, posting centine ıe matches of their muskets, though they ıost of them making use of firelocks. R

passed the nights apart from his followers, in places to them unknown: for the many proclamations the viceroy of Barcelona had published against him, kept him in fear and disquiet, not daring to trust any body, and apprehensive lest his own men should either kill, or deliver him up to justice, for the price set upon his head: a life truly miserable and irksome. In short, Roque, Don Quixote, and Sancho, attended by six squires, set out for Barcelona, through unfrequented ways, short cuts, and covered paths. They arrived upon the strand on the eve of Saint John, in the nighttime; and Roque, embracing Don Quixote and Sancho, to whom he gave the ten crowns promised, but not yet given him, left them, with a thousand offers of service made on both sides.

Roque returned back, and Don Quixote stayed expecting the day, on horseback, just as he was; and it was not long before the face of the beautiful Aurora began to discover itself through the balconies of the east, rejoicing the grass and flowers, instead of rejoicing the ears; though, at the same instant, the ears also were rejoiced by the sound of abundance of waits and kettle-drums, the jingling of morrice-bells, with the trampling of horsemen, seemingly coming out of the city. Aurora gave place to the sun, which was rising by degrees from below the horizon, with a face bigger than a target. Don Quixote and Sancho, casting their eyes around on every side, saw the sea, which till then they had never seen. It appeared to them very large and spacious, somewhat bigger than the lakes of Ruydera, which they had seen in La Mancha. They saw the gallies lying close to the shore, which, taking in their awnings, appeared full of streamers, and pennants trembling in the wind, and kissing and brushing the water. From within them sounded clarions, trumpets, and waits, filling the air all around with sweet and martial music. Presently the gallies began to move, and to skirmish, as it were, on the still waters; and, at the same time, corresponding with them, as it were, on the land, an infinite number of cavaliers mounted on beautiful horses, and attended with gay liveries, issued forth from the city. The soldiers on board the gallies discharged several rounds of cannon, which were answered by those on the walls and forts

of the city. The heavy artillery, with dreadful
rent the wind, which was echoed back by the c
on the forecastles of the gallies. The sea was
ful, the land jocund, and the air bright, only no
then obscured a little by the smoke of the art
All which together seemed to infuse and enger
sudden pleasure in all the people. Sancho cou
imagine how those bulks, which moved backwar
forwards in the sea, came to have so many legs.

By this time those with the liveries came u
full gallop, with lelilies and shouts after the M
fashion, to the place where Don Quixote was sta
wrapped in wonder and surprise; and one of the
person to whom Roque had sent the letter) sai
loud voice to Don Quixote: Welcome to our cit
mirror, the beacon, and polar star of knight-errar
its greatest extent: welcome, I say, the valorou
Quixote de la Mancha; not the spurious, the fict
the apocryphal, lately exhibited among us in lyi
tories, but the true, the legitimate the genuine
cribed to us by Cid Hamete Ben Engeli, the flo
historians. Don Quixote answered not a wor
did the cavaliers wait for any answer: but wh
about and about with all their followers, they be
career and curvet it round Don Quixote, who t
to Sancho said: These people seem to know u
I will lay a wager they have read our history, an
that of the Arragonese lately printed. The gent
who spoke to Don Quixote, said again to hi
pleased signor Don Quixote, to come along w
for we are all very humble servants, and great
of Roque Guinart. To which Don Quixote r
If courtesies beget courtesies, yours, good sir, is
ter, or very near kinswoman, to those of the
Roque: conduct me whither you please: for I h
other will but yours, especially if you please
ploy it in your service. The gentleman answ
expressions no less civil; and enclosing him
midst of them, they all marched with him, to the
of waits and drums, toward the city, at the en
whereof, the wicked one, who is the author of
chief, so ordered it, that among the boys who
wicked than the wicked one himself, two bo
lucky rogues crowded through the press, a

them lifting up Dapple's tail, and the other that of R
sinante, they thrust under each a handful of bris
The poor beasts felt the new spurs, and by clapp
their tails the closer, augmented their smart in su
sort, that, after several plunges, they flung their rid
to the ground. Don Quixote, out of countenance a
affronted, hastened to free his horse's tail from this n
plumage, and Sancho did the like by Dapple. Th
who conducted Don Quixote would have chastised
insolence of the boys; but it was impossible; for th
were soon lost among above a thousand more that
lowed them. Don Quixote and Sancho mounted ag
and, with the same accla[illegible]ons and music, arrived
their conductor's house, [illegible] was large and fair, su
in short, as became a ge[illegible]an of fortune: where
will leave them for the p[illegible]t; for so Cid Hamete
Engeli will have it.

CH[illegible] X.

Which treats of the adventure of the enchanted he[illegible] with other trifles that must not be omitted.

Don Quixote's host was called Don Antonio M
reno, a rich and discreet gentleman, and a lover
mirth in a decent and civil way. And so, having D
Quixote in his house, he began to contrive meth
how, without prejudice to his guest he might take
vantage of Don Quixote's madness; for jests that h
are no jests, nor are those pastimes good for any thi
which turn to the detriment of a third person. T
first thing, therefore, he did, was, to cause Don Qu
ote to be unarmed, and exposed to view in his strai
shamois doublet (as we have already described a
painted it,) in a balcony, which looked into one of
chief streets of the city, in sight of the populace a
one of the boys, who stood gazing at him as if he
been a monkey. The cavaliers with the liveries
gan to career it afresh before him, as if for him a
and not in honour of that day's festival, they ha
vided them. Sancho was highly delighted, think
had found, without knowing how or which w
er Camacho's wedding, another house like
de Miranda's and another castle like the duk

DON QUIXOTE.

Several of Don Antonio's friends dined with l
day, all honouring and treating Don Quixo
knight-errant; at which he was so puffed up wi
glory, that he could scarcely conceal the plea
gave him. Sancho's witty conceits were such,
many, that all the servants of the house hung
were upon his lips, and so did all that heard
While they were at table, Don Antonio said to Sa
We are told here, honest Sancho, that you are so
a lover of capons and sausages, that, when you
filled your belly, you stuff your pockets with th
mainder for the next day. No, sir, it is not so, ans
ed Sancho: your worship is misinformed; for I
more cleanly than gluttonous; and my master
Quixote here present, knows very well, how he ar
often live eight days upon a handful of acorns or ha
nuts: it is true, indeed, if it so falls out, that they g
me a heifer, I make haste with a halter; I mean, t
I eat whatever is offered me, and take the times a
find them; and whoever has said, that I am given
eat much, and am not cleanly, take it from me, he
very much out; and I would say this in another ma
ner, were it not out of respect to the honourable beard
here at table. In truth, quoth Don Quixote, Sancho'
parsimony and cleanliness in eating deserve to be writ
en and engraved on plates of brass, to remain an ete
al memorial for ages to come. I must confess, whe
e is hungry he seems to be somewhat of a glutton
r he eats fast, and chews on both sides at once
it, as for cleanliness, he alway strictly observes it
d, when he was a governor, he learned to eat so nice
that he took up grapes, and even the grains of
negranate, with the point of a fork. How! quot
n Antonio, has Sancho then been a governor? Ye
wered Sancho, and of an island called Barataria
days I governed it at my own will and pleasur
which time I lost my rest, and learned to despise a
governments in the world: I fled away from it, an
nto a pit, where I looked upon myself as a dea
and out of which I escaped alive by a miracl
Quixote related minutely all the circumsta
cho's government; which gave great pleas
rers.

cloth being taken away, Don Antonio

Don Quixote by the hand, led him into a distant apartment, in which there was no other furniture but a table seemingly of jasper standing upon a foot of the same; upon which there was placed, after the manner of the bust of the Roman emperors, a head, which seemed to be of brass. Don Antonia walked with Don Quixote up and down the room, taking several turns about the table; after which he said: Signor Don Quixote, now that I am assured nobody is within hearing, and that the door is fast, I will tell you one of the rarest adventures, or rather one of the greatest novelties, that can be imagined, upon condition, that what I shall tell you be deposited in the inmost recesses of secresy. I swear it shall, answered Don Quixote, and I will clap a grave-stone over it, for the greater security; for I would have your worship know, Signor Don Antonio, (for by this time he had learned his name) that you are talking to one who, though he has ears to hear, has no tongue to speak; so that you may safely transfer whatever is in your breast into mine, and make account you have thrown it into the abyss of silence. In confidence of this promise, answered Don Antonio, I will raise your admiration by what you shall see and hear, and procure myself some relief from the pain I suffer by not having somebody to communicate my secrets to, which are not to be trusted with every body. Don Quixote was in suspense, expecting what so many precautions would end in. Don Antonio then, taking hold of his hand, made him pass it over the brazen head, the table, and the jasper pedestal it stood upon, and then said: This head, Signor Don Quixote, was wrought and contrived by one of the greatest enchanters and wizards the world ever had. He was, I think, by birth a Polander, and disciple of the famous Escotillo,* of whom so many wonders are related. He was here in my house, and, for the reward of a thousand crowns, made me this head, which has the virtue and

* Or, "Little Scot." Cervantes means Michael Scotus, who being more knowing in natural and experimental philosophy than was common in the dark ages of ignorance, passed for a magician, as Friar *Bacon and Albert the* Great did; of the first of whom *(Friar Bacon) a like* story of a brazen head is told.

property of answering to every question asked at its ear. After drawing figures, erecting schemes, and observing the stars, he brought it at length to the perfection we shall see to-morrow; for it is mute on Fridays, and this happening to be Friday, we must wait till to-morrow. In the meanwhile you may bethink yourself what questions you will ask; for I know by experience, it tells the truth in all its answers. Don Quixote wondered at the property and virtue of the head, and was ready to disbelieve Don Antonio: but, considering how short a time was set for making the experiment, he would say no more, but only thanked him for having discovered to him so great a secret. They went out of the chamber: Don Antonio locked the door after him; and they came to the hall, where the rest of the gentlemen were, and in this time Sancho had recounted to them many of the adventures and accidents that had befallen his master.

That evening they carried Don Quixote abroad, to take the air, not armed, but dressed like a citizen in a long loose garment of tawny coloured cloth, which would have made frost itself sweat at that season. They ordered their servants to entertain and amuse Sancho, so as not to let him go out of doors. Don Quixote rode, not upon Rosinante, but upon a large, easy-paced mule, handsomely accoutred. In dressing him, unperceived by him, they pinned at his back a parchment whereon was written, in capital letters; "THIS IS DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA." They no sooner began their march, but the scroll drew the eyes of all that passed by, and they read aloud, This is Don Quixote de la Mancha. Don Quixote wondered that every body who saw him, named and knew him; and, turning to Don Antonio, who was riding by his side, he said: Great is the prerogative inherent in knight-errantry, since it makes all its professors known and renowned throughout the limits of the earth: for, pray observe, Signor Don Antonio, how the very boys of this city know me, without having ever seen me. It is true, Signor Don Quixote, answered Don Antonio *for, as fire cannot be hidden nor confined, so virtue will be known*: and that, which is obtained by the profession of arms, shines with a brightness and lustre superior to that of all others.

Now it happened, that, as Don Quixote wa
along with the applause aforesaid, a Castilian, w
read the label on his shoulders, lifted up hi
saying: The devil take thee for Don Quixot
Mancha! what! are you got hither, without be
led by the infinite number of bangs you have ha
your back? You are mad, and, were you so
and within the doors of your own folly, the m
were the less: but you have the property of c
ing into fools and madmen all that converse, o
any communication with you: witness these
men who accompany you. Get you home, fo
look after your estate, your wife and childre
leave off these vanities, which worm-eat your
and skim off the cream of your understanding.
er, quoth Don Antonio, keep on your way, and
be giving counsel to those who do not ask it.
Don Quixote de la Mancha is wise, and we wh
him company are not fools. Virtue challenges
wherever it is found: and begone in an evil ho
meddle not where you are not called. Befor
answered the Castilian, your worship is in the
for to give advice to this good man, is to kick
the pricks. But for all that it grieves me very
that the good sense, it is said, this madman di
in all other things, should run to waste throu
channel of his knight-errantry: and the evi
your worship wished me, be to me and to all
scendants, if, from this day forward, though I
live more years than Methusalem, I give advice
body, though they should ask it me. The advi
parted; the procession went on: but the boys a
people crowded so to read the scroll, that Don
nio was forced to take it off, under pretence of
off something else.

Night came: the processioners returned
where was a ball of ladies: for Don Antonio'
who was a lady of distinction, cheerful, beautif
discreet, had invited several of her friends to
her guest, and to entertain them with his unh
madness. Several ladies came: they supped sp
ly, and the ball began about ten o'clock at
Among the ladies, there were two of an ar
pleasant disposition, who, though they wer
modest, yet *behaved* with more freedom th

jest might divert without giving distaste. ere so eager to take Don Quixote out to dance, teased, not only his body but his very soul. perfect sight to behold the figure of Don Quix-, lank, lean, and yellow, straitened in his awkward, and especially not at all nimble. es courted him, as it were by stealth, and he l them by stealth too. But finding himself ised by their courtships, he exalted his voice : Fugite, partes, adversæ ; leave me to my re- unwelcome thoughts ; avaunt ladies, with your for she, who is queen of mine, the peerless del Toboso, will not consent that any others should subject and subdue me. And so say- it down in the middle of the hall upon the te fatigued and disjointed by this dancing ex- Don Antonio ordered the servants to take him carry him to bed ; and the first who lent an hand, was Sancho, who said : What, in God's aster of mine, put you upon dancing ? Think all who are valiant must be caperers, or all errant dancing masters ? If you think so, I say mistaken : I know those, who would sooner nt's wind-pipe than a caper. Had you been hoe jig,* I would have supplied your defect ; it away like any jer-falcon : but, as for regu- ing, I cannot work a stitch at it. With this, like talk, Sancho furnished matter of laughter mpany, and laid his master in bed, covering stoutly, that he might sweat out the cold he ve got by his dancing.

ext day, Don Antonio thought fit to make ex- of the enchanted head ; and so, with Don Sancho, and two other friends, with the two who had worried Don Quixote in dancing (for ed that night with Don Antonio's wife) he himself up in the room where the head stood. them the property it had, charged them all secret, and told them this was the first day ing the virtue of that enchanted head. No- Don Antonio's two friends knew the trick of

---

ich the dancers slap the sole of their shoe alm of their hand in time and measure.

the enchantment; and, if Don Antonio ha
discovered it to them, they would also hav
much surprised as the rest, it being impossi
be so, so cunningly and curiously was it
The first who approached the ear of the
Don Antonio himself, who said in a low voic
so low but he was overheard by them all:
head, by the virtue inherent in thee, what a
thinking of? The head answered, without mo
lips in a clear and distinct voice, so as to be
every body: I am no judge of thoughts. At
of which they were all astonished, especially si
ther in the room, nor any where about the tab
there any human creature that could answer.
many of us are here? demanded Don Antonio
Answer was made in the same key: You an
wife, with two friends of yours, and two of he
a famous knight called Don Quixote de la M
with a certain squire of his, Sancho Panza by
Here was wondering indeed; here was every
hair standing on end out of pure affright. Don
nio, going aside at some distance from the head,
This is enough to assure me I was not deceive
him who sold you to me, sage head, speaking head
swering head, and admirable head! Let somebody
go and ask it what they please.

Now, as women are commonly in haste, and inq
itive, the first who went up to it was one of the
friends of Don Antonio's wife, and her question w
Tell me, head, what shall I do to be very handsom
It was answered: Be very modest. I ask you no mo
said the querist. Then her companion came up, a
said: I would know, head, whether my husband lov
me, or no. The answer was: You may easily kno
that by his usage of you. The married woman, goin
aside, said: The question might very well have bee
spared; for, in reality, a man's actions are the best in-
terpreters of his affections. Then one of Don Anto-
nio's two friends went and asked him: Who am I?
The answer was: You know. I do not ask you that,
answered the gentleman, but only, whether you know
me? I do, replied the head; you are Don Pedro Nor-
iz. *I desire to hear no more*, said he, since this is suf-
ficient, O head, to convince me, that you know every

Then the other friend stepped up, and demand-
ill me, head, what desires has my eldest son?
nswered: Have I not told you already, that I
udge of thoughts? But, for all that, I can tell
at your son's desire is to bury you. It is so,
ne gentleman; I see it with my eyes, and touch
my finger; and I ask no more questions. Then
Don Antonio's wife, and said: I know not, O
what to ask you: only I would know of you,
r I shall enjoy my dear husband many years?
swer was: You shall; for his good constitution,
temperate way of living, promise many years
which several are wont to shorten by intemper-
Next came Don Quixote, and said: Tell me, O
er, was it truth, or a dream, what I related as
befallen me in Montesinos's cave? Will the
ng of Sancho, my squire, be certainly fulfilled?
e disenchantment of Dulcinea take effect? As
business of the cave, it was answered, there is
o be said: it has something of both: Sancho's
ng will go on but slowly: the disenchantment
cinea will be brought about in due time. I de-
know no more, quoth Don Quixote; for, so I
t see Dulcinea disenchanted, I shall make ac-
that all the good fortune I can desire comes
e at a clap. The last querist was Sancho, and
stion was this: Head, shall I peradventure, get
government? Shall I quit the penurious life
ire? Shall I return to see my wife and chil-
To which it was answered: You shall govern
own house, and, if you return to it, you shall
r wife and your children, and, quitting service,
all cease to be a squire. Very good, in faith,
Sancho Panza; I could have told myself as
and the prophet Perogrullo could have told me
e. Beast, quoth Don Quixote, what answer
you have? Is it not enough that the answers
id returns correspond to the questions put to it?
is enough, answered Sancho: but I wish it had
ed itself, and told me a little more.

ended the questions and answers, but not th
ent of the whole company, excepting Don A
wo friends, who knew the secret: which
Ben Engeli would immediately discover

to keep the world in suspense, believing there was some witchcraft, or extraordinary mystery, concealed in that head: and therefore he says, that Don Antonio Moreno procured it to be made in imitation of another head he had seen at Madrid, made by a statuary for his own diversion, and to surprise the ignorant; and the machine was contrived in this manner. The table was of wood, painted, and varnished over like jasper; and the foot it stood upon was of the same, with four eagle claws, to make it stand the firmer, and bear the weight the better. The head, resembling that of a Roman emperor, and coloured like copper, was hollow, and so was the table itself, in which the bust was so exactly fixed, that no sign of a joint appeared. The foot also was hollow, and answered to the neck and breast of the head; and all this corresponding with another chamber just under that where the head stood. Through all this hollow of the foot, table, neck, and breast of the figure aforesaid, went a pipe of tin which could not be seen. The answerer was placed in the chamber underneath, with his mouth close to the pipe, so that the voice descended and ascended in clear and articulate sounds, as through a speaking-trumpet; and thus it was impossible to discover the juggle. A nephew of Don Antonio's, a student, acute and discreet, was the respondent; who, being informed beforehand by his uncle, who were to be with him that day in the chamber of the head, could easily answer, readily and exactly, to the first question: to the rest he answered by conjectures, and, as a discreet person, discreetly. Cid Hamete says further that this wonderful machine lasted about eight or ten days: but it being divulged up and down the city, that Don Antonio kept in his house an enchanted head, which answered to all questions, he, fearing lest it should come to the ears of the watchful sentinels of our faith, acquainted the gentlemen of the inquisition with the secret; who ordered him to break it in pieces, lest the ignorant vulgar should be scandalized at it: but still, in the opinion of Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, the head continued to be enchanted, and an answerer of questions, more indeed to the satisfaction of Don Quixote than of Sancho.

The gentlemen of the town, in complaisance to Don *Antonio, and for* the better entertainment of Don Quix-

ote, as well as to give him an opportunity of discovering his follies, appointed a running at the ring six days after, which was prevented by an accident that will be told hereafter. Don Quixote had a mind to walk about the town, without ceremony, and on foot, apprehending that, if he went on horseback, he should be persecuted by the boys: and so he and Sancho, with two servants assigned him by Don Antonio. walked out to make the tour. Now it fell out, that, as they passed through a certain street, Don Quixote, lifting up his eyes saw written over a door in very large letters, "Here books are printed." At which he was much pleased: for, till then, he had never seen any printing, and was desirous to know how it was performed. In he went, with all his retinue, and saw drawing off the sheets in one place, correcting in another, composing in this, revising in that; in short, all the machinery to be seen, in great printing houses. Don Quixote went to one of the boxes, and asked, what they had in hand there. The workman told him: he wondered, and went on. He came to another box, and asked one, what he was doing. The workman answered: Sir, that gentleman yonder (pointing to a man of a good person, and appearance, and of some gravity) has translated an Italian book into our Castilian language, and I am composing it here for the press. What title has the book? demanded Don Quixote. To which the author answered: Sir, the book in Italian is called, Le Bagatelle. And what answers to Bagatelle in our Castilian? quoth Don Quixote. Le Bagatelle, said the author, is as if we should say Trifles. But, though its title be mean, it contains many very good and substantial things. Quoth Don Quixote; I know a little of the Tuscan language, and value myself upon singing some stanzas of Ariosto. But, good sir, pray, tell me (and I do not say this with design to examine your skill, but out of curiosity, and nothing else,) in the course of your writing have you ever met with the word Pignata? Yes, often, replied the author. And how do you translate it in Castilian? quoth Don Quixote. How should I translate it, replied the author, but by the word Olla? Body of me, said Don Quixote, what a progress has your worship made in the Tuscan language! I would venture a good wager, that, where the Tuscan says Piac

you say, in Castilian, Plaze; and where it say
say Mas; and Su you translate Arriba, an
Abaxo.* I do so, most certainly, quoth the
for these are their proper renderings. I da
quoth Don Quixote, you are not known in t
which is ever an enemy to rewarding florid
laudable pains. What abilities are lost, what
cooped up, and what virtues undervalued! B
that, I [illegible] f opinion, that, transl
of one l [illegible] nother, unless it be fr
queens [illegible], Greek and Latin, is
ting to [illegible] g side of a piece of
where, t [illegible] res are seen, they a
ends [illegible] h obscure them, and
seen [illegible] ss and evenness of
side. [illegible] ng out of easy languag
neith [illegible] ition, any more than
ing one [illegible] other. But I would
hence infer, that [illegible] slating is not a laudable
for a man may be employed in things of wor
quence, and less advantage. Out of this ac
excepted the two celebrated translators, doct
topher de Figueroa in his Pastor Fido, and I
de Xauregui in his Aminta;† in which, wit
ous felicity, they bring in doubt, which is th
tion, and which the original. But, tell me, si
book printed on your own account, or have yo
copy to some bookseller? I print it on my
count, answered the author, and I expect
thousand ducats by this first impression, of wh
will be two thousand copies, and they will
six reals a set, in a trice. Mighty well, sir,
Don Quixote: it is plain you know but litt
turns and doubles of the booksellers, and the
tion there is among them. I promise you, v
find the weight of two thousand volumes u

* The English reader will excuse the not e
a piece of criticism, which could afford him n
struction nor entertainment.

† The author must have seen it in manuscri
came not out at Seville till three years after,
The Pastor Fido had been published six years
Valencia.

back it will so depress you, that you will be frightened, especially if the book be any thing dull, or not over sprightly. What! sir, quoth the author, would you have me make over my right to the bookseller, who, perhaps, will give me three maravedis for it, and even think he does me a kindness in giving me so much? I print no more books to purchase fame in the world: for I am already sufficiently known by my works. Profit I seek, without which fame is not worth a farthing. God send you good success, answered Don Quixote; and, going on to another box, he saw they were correcting a sheet of another book, entitled, "The light of the soul." And seeing it, he said: These kind of books, though there are a great many of them abroad, are those that ought to be printed; for there are abundance of sinners up and down, and so many benighted persons stand in need of an infinite number of lights. He went forward, and saw they were correcting another book; and asking its title, he was answered, that it was called "The second part of the ingenious gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha," written by such an one, an inhabitant of Tordesillas. I know something of that book, quoth Don Quixote; and, in truth and on my conscience, I thought it had been burnt before now, and reduced to ashes, for its impertinence: but its Martinmas will come, as it does to every hog:* for all fabulous histories are so far good and entertaining, as they come near the truth, or the resemblance of it; and true histories themselves are so much the better, by how much the truer. And, so saying, he went out of the printing-house with some shew of disgust: and that same day Don Antonio purposed to carry him to see the gallies, which lay in the road; whereat Sancho rejoiced much, having never in his life seen any. Don Antonio gave notice to the commodore of the four gallies, that he would bring his guest, the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, that afternoon, to see them, of whom the commodore, and all the inhabitants of the city, had some knowledge; and what befel him there, shall be told in the following chapter.

* Martinmas, or about the Feast of St. Martin, is the time for *making* bacon for winter

CHAP. XI.

Of the unlucky accident which befel Sancho in visiting the gallies, and the strange adve the beautiful Morisco.

MANY were the reflections Don Quixote ma the answer of the enchanted head, none of t ting upon the trick of it, and all centering in t ise, which he looked upon as certain, of th chantment of Dulcinea. He rejoiced within believing he should soon see the accomplish it; and Sancho, though he abhorred being a as has been said, had still a desire to comma and he obeyed: such is the misfortune pow along with it, though but in jest. In short, ning, Don Antonio Moreno, and his two frier Don Quixote, and Sancho, went to the galli commodore of the four gallies, who had notic coming of the two famous personages, Don and Sancho, no sooner perceived them appr shore, but he ordered all the gallies to str awnings, and the waits to play: and immed sent out the pinnace, covered with rich car furnished with cushions of crimson velvet; as Don Quixote set his foot into it, the capt discharged her forecastle piece, and the oth did the like; and, at his mounting the ladde starboard-side, all the crew of slaves saluted the custom is, when a person of rank comes with three Hu, hu, hu's. The general (for s call him) who was a gentleman of quality of gave Don Quixote his hand, and embraced hin This day will I mark with a white stone, as best I ever wish to see while I live, having se Don Quixote de la Mancha, in whom is comp abridged the whole worth of knight-errant Quixote answered him in expressions no les ous, being overjoyed to find himself treated lord. All the company went to the poop, w finely adorned, and seated themselves upon th *The boatswain* passed along the middle gang *gave the signal* with his whistle for the slav

which was done in an instant. Sancho seeing so many men in buff, was frightened, and more so, when he saw them spread an awning so swiftly over the galley, that he thought all the devils in hell were there at work. But all this was tarts and cheese-cakes to what I am going to relate.

Sancho was seated near the stern, on the right hand, close to the hindmost rower, who, being instructed what he was to do, laid hold on Sancho, and lifted him up in his arms. Then the whole crew of slaves, standing up, and beginning from the right side, passed him from bank to bank, and from hand to hand, so swiftly, that poor Sancho lost the very sight of his eyes, and verily thought the devils themselves were carrying him away; and they had not done with him, till they brought him round by the left side, and replaced him at the stern. The poor wretch remained bruised, out of breath, and in a cold sweat without being able to imagine what had befallen him. Don Quixote, who beheld Sancho's flight without wings, asked the general, if that was a ceremony commonly used at people's first coming aboard the gallies: for if so, he, who had no intention of making profession* in them, had no inclination to perform the like excercise, and vowed to God, that if any one presumed to lay hold of him to toss him, he would kick their souls out. And, saying this, he stood up, and laid his hand on his sword. At that instant they struck the awning, and, with a great noise, let fall the main-yard from the top of the mast to the bottom. Sancho thought the sky was falling off its hinges, and tumbling upon his head, and shrinking it down, he clapped it for fear between his legs. Don Quixote knew not what to think of it, and he too quaked, shrugged his shoulders, and changed countenance. The slaves hoisted the main-yard with the same swiftness and noise they had struck it; and all this, without speaking a word, as if they had neither voice nor breath. The boatswain made a signal for weighing anchor, and, jumping into the middle of the forecastle, with his half-pike, he began to *fly-flap the* shoulders of the slaves at the oar, with

* *A term borrowed from the admission of friars into monasteries.*

little and little, to put off to se
many red feet (for such he took
all together, said to himself: A
things indeed, and not those my
have these unhappy wretches d
this rate? and how has this one
ling up and down, the boldness
maintain it, this is hell, or pur
Quixote, seeing with what atte
all that passed, said: Ah, friend
and how cheaply might you, if
waist, and placing yourself an
put an end to the enchantment
ing so many companions in pai
little of your own, besides, per
would take every lash of theirs,
a hand, upon account for ten o
day or other, give yourself.

The general would have aske
of, and what he meant by the d
cinea; when a mariner said:
makes a signal, that there is a
coast, on the western side. T
leaped upon the middle gang-wa
my lads, let her not escape us:
antine belonging to the corsai
fort makes the signal for. The
came up with the captain, to re
general commanded, that two o
to sea as fast as they could, a
would go along shore, and so th
cape. The crew plied the oar
with such violence, that they
that stood out to sea, about two
sail, which they judged to carr
teen banks of oars; and so it p
sel, discovering the gallies, pu
design and in hope to get away
unfortunately for her, the capt
be one of the swiftest vessels u
fore gained upon the brigantin
sairs saw they could not escape
her ordered his men to drop the
selves prisoners, that they mi

captain of our gallies. But fortune, that would h
it otherwise, so ordered, that, just as the captain-ga
came so near, that the corsairs could hear a voice f
her, calling to them to surrender, two Toraques, t
is to say, two Turks that were drunk, who came in
brigantine with twelve others, discharged two musk
with which they killed two of our soldiers upon
prow. Which the general seeing, he swore not
leave a man alive he should take in the vessel.
coming up with all fury to board her, she slipped a
under the oars of the galley. The galley ran a-hea
good way: they in the vessel, perceiving they w
got clear, made all the way they could while the ga
was coming about, and again put themselves in cl
with oars and sails. But their diligence did them
so much good, as their presumption did them ha
for the captain-galley, overtaking them in a little n
than half a mile, clapped her oars on the vessel,
took them all alive.

By this time the two other gallies were come
and all four returned with their prize to the str
where a vast concourse of people stood expecting th
desirous to see what they had taken. The gen
cast anchor near the land, and, knowing that the v
roy was upon the shore, he ordered out the boat
bring him on board, and commanded the main-yar
be let down, immediately to hang thereon the ma
of the vessel, and the rest of the Turks he had ta
in her, being about six and thirty persons, all brisk
lows, and most of them Turkish musqueteers.
general inquired, which was the master of the bri
tine, and one of the captives, who afterwards appe
to be a Spanish renegado, answered him in Castili
This youth, sir, you see here, is our master; poin
to one of the most beautiful and most graceful yo
men that human imagination could paint. His age
appearance, did not reach twenty years. The gen
said to him: Tell me, ill-advised dog, what moved
to kill my soldiers, when you saw it was impossib
escape? *Is this* the respect paid to captain-ge
Know you not, that temerity is not valour, an
doubtful hopes should make men daring, but n
The youth would have replied; but the gene
not hear him then, by reason he was going

the viceroy, who was just then entering th
with whom there came several of his serv
some people of the town. You have had a f
of it, signor general, said the viceroy. So
swered the general, that your excellency shall
ly see it hanged up at the yard-arm. How so
the viceroy. Because, replied the general, a
law, against [illegible] and the custom of
have killed [illegible] he best soldiers belo
the gallies, [illegible] worn to hang every m
prisoner, e[illegible] youth here, who is
the brigant[illegible] to one, who had his
ready tied, a[illegible] about his neck, and
pecting deat[illegible] eroy looked at him, a
him so beau[illegible] teel, and so humble (h
giving him i[illegible] ant a kind of letter o
mendation) h[illegible] ind to save him, and
he asked him: Tell me, sir, are you a Turk,
or a renegado? To which the youth answer
Castilian tongue: I am neither a Turk, no
nor a renegado. What are you, then? re
viceroy. A Christian woman, replied the y
Christian woman, in such a garb, and in such
stances, said the viceroy, is a thing rather to
dered at than believed. Gentlemen, said th
suspend the execution of my death: It will be
loss to defer your revenge while I recount the
my life. What heart could be so hard, as not
at these expressions, at least so far as to hear
sad and afflicted youth had to say? The ge
him say what he pleased, but not to expect p
his notorious offence. With this licence, t
began his story in the following manner:—

I was born of Moorish parents, of that nat
unhappy than wise, so lately overwhelmed un
of misfortunes. In the current of their calami
carried away by two of my uncles into Ba
availing me nothing to say I was a Christian,
I am, and not of the feigned or pretended, b
true and catholic ones. The discovery of t
had no influence on those who were charged
unhappy banishment; nor would my uncles b
but rather took it for a lie, and an invention
in order to remain in the country where I

and so, by force rather than by my good will, they
ried me with them. My mother was a christian,
my father a discreet man, and a christian too. I su
ed in the catholic faith with my milk. I was vi
ously brought up, and, neither in my language nor
haviour, did I, as I thought, give any indication of
ing a Morisco. My beauty, if I have any, grew up,
kept equal pace with these virtues; for such I beli
them to be: and though my modesty and reserve w
great, I could not avoid being seen by a young gen
man, called Don Gaspar Gregorio, eldest son of a
son of distinction, whose estate joins to our to
How he saw me, how we conversed together, how
was undone for me, and how I was little less for l
would be tedious to relate, especially at a time w
I am under apprehension, that the cruel cord, wl
threatens me, may interpose between my tongue
my throat; and therefore I will only say, that
Gregorio resolved to bear me company in our ban
ment. And so, mingling with the Moors, who c
from other towns (for he spoke the language well
the journey he contracted an intimacy with my
uncles, who had the charge of me: for my father,
ing a prudent and provident person, as soon as he
the first edict for our banishment, left the town,
went to seek some place of refuge for us in for
kingdoms. He left a great number of pearls, and
cious stones of great value, hid and buried in a cer
place, known to me only, with some money in cr
does and pistoles of gold, commanding me in no
to touch the treasure he left, if peradventure we sh
be banished before he returned. I obeyed, and pa
over into Barbary with my uncles, and other relat
and acquaintance, as I have already said; and the p
we settled in was Algiers, or rather hell itself.
king heard of my beauty, and fame told him of my
es, which partly proved my good fortune. He s
me, and asked me of what part of Spain I was,
what money and jewels I had brought with me.
him the town, and that the jewels and money
buried in it; but that they might easily be brou
if I myself went to fetch them. All this I told
hopes that his own covetousness, more than m
would blind him.

law, against all reason
have killed me two of
the gallies, and I have
prisoner, especially thi
the brigantine; pointi
ready tied, and a rope
pecting death. The vi
him so beautiful, so ge
giving him in that inst
recendation) he had a n
He asked him: Tell me,
or a renegado? To w
Castilian tongue: I am
or a renegado. Wha
viceroy. A Christian w
Christian woman, in suc
stances, said the viceroy
ered at than believed.
suspend the execution of
cess to defer your revenge
my life. What heart can

uld touch upon, in the habit of christians,
o cause provided) would needs first wear
d make some prize, if they could, fearing,
d land us first, we might be induced by
t or other to discover, that such a vessel
d, if perchance there were any galleys
this coast, she might be taken. Last night
shore, and, not knowing any thing of
ffice, were discovered ourselves, and what
has befallen us. In short, Don Gasp-
ning the women, in women's attire, and
nger of being undone; and I find myself
ds tied, expecting, or rather fearing, to
of which I am already weary. This, sir,
ction of my lamentable story, as true as
What I beg of you is, that you will suf-
take a christian since, as I have told you,
chargeable of the blame into which these
have fallen. Here she held her peace,
nant with tender tears, which were so
many of those of the standers by.
y, being of a tender and compassionate
thout speaking a word, went to her, and
hands unbound the cord that tied the
of the fair Moriscos, while the Mori-
was relating her strange story, an old
ame aboard the galley with the viceroy,
on her, and scarcely had she made
[illegible]
words interrupted by a thousand sighs
[illegible]

While he was thus discoursing with me, infor
was given him, that one of the genteelest and
somest youths imaginable came in my comp
presently understood that they meant Don Gasp
gorio, whose beauty is beyond all possibility of e
ation. I was greatly disturbed, when I conside
danger Don Gregor s in; for, among those
rous Turks, a bea boy or youth is more
and esteemed than an, be she never so be
The king commanded him to be immediately b
before him, that he might see him, and asked m
was true, what he was told of that youth. I, as
spired by heaven, answered: Yes, it was; but
must inform him, he was not a man, but a woma
was: and I requested, that he would let me
dress her in her proper garb, that she might s
full beauty, and appear in his presence with t
concern. He said, I might go in a good hour, a
next day he would talk with me of the manner
might conveniently return to Spain, to get the
treasure. I consulted with Don Gaspar: I to
the danger he ran in appearing as a man: and I d
him like a Morisca, and that very afternoon intr
him as a woman to the king, who was in admira
the sight of her, and proposed to reserve her for
ent to the grand signor; and, to prevent the ri
might run in the seraglio among his own wiv
distrusting himself, he ordered her to be lodged
house of a Moorish lady of quality, there to be ke
waited upon: whither she was instantly con
What we both felt (for I cannot deny that I lov
I leave to the consideration of those who m
love each other, and are forced to part. Th
presently gave orders for my returning to Spain,
brigantine, accompanied by two Turks, being

[redacted]

Spain we should touch upon, in the habit of christians, (with which we came provided) would needs first scour the coast, and make some prize, if they could, fearing, if they should land us first, we might be induced by some accident or other to discover, that such a vessel was at sea, and, if perchance there were any gallies abroad upon this coast, she might be taken. Last night we made this shore, and, not knowing any thing of these four gallies, were discovered ourselves, and what you have seen has befallen us. In short, Don Gregorio remains among the women, in woman's attire, and in manifest danger of being undone; and I find myself, with my hands tied, expecting, or rather fearing, to lose that life, of which I am already weary. This, sir, is the conclusion of my lamentable story, as true as unfortunate. What I beg of you is, that you will suffer me to die like a christian since, as I have told you, I am no wise chargeable of the blame into which those of my nation have fallen. Here she held her peace, her eyes pregnant with tender tears, which were accompanied by many of those of the standers by.

The viceroy, being of a tender and compassionate disposition, without speaking a word, went to her, and with his own hands unbound the cord that tied the beautiful ones of the fair Morisca. while the Moriscan Christian was relating her strange story, an old pilgrim, who came aboard the galley with the viceroy, fastened his eyes on her, and, scarcely had she made an end, when, throwing himself at her feet, and embracing them, with words interrupted by a thousand sobs and sighs, he said: O Anna Felix! my unhappy daughter! I am thy father Ricote, who am returned to seek thee, not being able to live without thee, who art my very soul. At which words Sancho opened his eyes, and lifted up his head, which he was holding down ruminating upon his late disgrace; and looking at the pilgrim, he knew him to be the very Ricote he met with upon the day he left his government, and was persuaded this must be his daughter: who, being no[illegible] unbound, embraced her father, mingling her tears w[illegible] his. Ricote said to the general and the viceroy: [illegible] sirs, is my daughter, happy in her name alone: [illegible] Felix she is called, with the surname of Ricote, [illegible] ous for her own beauty, as for her father's ric[illegible]

left my native country, to seek, in foreign ki
some shelter and safe retreat, and, having fo
in Germany, I returned, in this pilgrim's wee
company of some Germans, in quest of my d
and to take up a great deal of wealth I had lef
My daughter I found not, but the treasure I
have it in my possession: and now, by the stra
of fortune you have seen, I have found the
which most enriches me—my beloved daugh
our innocence, and her tears and mine, thr
uprightness of your justice can open the gates o
let us partake of it, who never had a thought o
ing you, nor in any ways conspired with desig
people, who have been justly banished. Th
Sancho: I know Ricote very well, and am s
he says of Anna Felix's being his daughter is t
as for the other idle stories of his going and
and of his having a good or bad intention, I me
with them.

All that were present admired at the strang
the case; and the general said: Each tear
hinders me from fulfilling my oath: live, fair A
lix, all the years heaven has allotted you, and
daring and the insolent undergo the punishm
crime deserves. Immediately he ordered
two Turks, who had killed his soldiers, should
ed at the yard-arm. But the viceroy earnestly
ed him not to hang them, their fault being ra
effect of madness than of valour. The genera
to the viceroy's request; for it is not easy to
revenge in cold blood. Then they consulted h
liver Don Gaspar Gregorio from the danger he
in. Ricote offered above two thousand ducat
he had in pearls and jewels, towards it. Seve
dients were proposed, but none so likely to su
that of the Spanish renegado afore-mentioned,
fered to return to Algiers in a small bark of ab
banks, armed with christian rowers; for h
where, how, and when he might land; nor w
norant of the house in which Don Gaspar w
The general and the viceroy were in doubt
er they should rely on the renegado, or t
with the christians, who were to row at the
na Felix answered for him, and her fathe

said, he would be answerable for the ransom of those chrstians, if they should be betrayed. Matters being thus settled, the viceroy went ashore, and Don Antonio Moreno took the Morisco and her father along with him, the viceroy charging him to regale and welcome them as much as possible, offering, on his own part, whatever his house afforded for their better entertainment; so great was the kindness and charity that the beauty of Anna Felix infused into his breast.

CHAP. XII.

Treating of the adventure, which gave Don Quixote more sorrow than any which had hitherto befallen him.

The history relates, that the wife of Don Antonio Moreno took a great deal of pleasure in seeing Anna Felix in her house. She gave her a kind welcome, enamoured as well of her beauty as of her discretion; for the Morisca excelled in both: and all the people of the city flocked to see her, as if they had been brought together by ringing the great bell. Don Quixote said to Don Antonio, that the method they had resolved upon for the redemption of Don Gregorio was quite a wrong one, there being more danger, than probability of success in it; and that they would do better to land him with his horse and arms, in Barbary; for he would fetch him off in spite of the whole Moorish race, as Don Gayferos had done by his spouse Melisendra. Take notice, sir, quoth Sancho, hearing this, that signor Don Gayferos rescued his spouse on firm land, and carried her over land into France: but here, if, peradventure, we rescue Don Gregorio, we have no way to bring him into Spain, since the sea is between. For all things there is a remedy, excepting for death, replied Don Quixote; for let but a vessel come to the sea-side, and we can embark in it, though the whole world should endeavour to oppose it. Your worship, quoth Sancho, contrives and makes the matter very easy: but between the saying and the fact is a very large tract: and I stick to the renegado, who seems me a very honest and good-natured man. Don

nio said, if the renegado should miscarry
ness, it would be time enough to put in pra
pedient of the great Don Quixote's passi
Barbary.

Two days after, the renegado set sail in
of six oars on a side, manned with a sto
two days after that, the gallies departed
vant, the general having engaged the vic
him advice of all that should happen in re
deliverance of Don Gregorio, and the fort
Felix.

One morning, Don Quixote being sall
take the air on the strand, armed at all poin
was wont to say, his arms were his finery,
creation fighting, and so he was seldom wit
he perceived advancing toward him a kn
likewise at all points. On his shield w
resplendent moon: and when he was come
.o be heard, he raised his voice, and, directi
Quixote, he said: Illustrious knight, and n
renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, I am
of the white moon, whose unheard-of explo
may bring him to your remembrance. I co
into combat with you, and to try the stren
arm, in order to make you know and confe
mistress, be she who she will, is, without
more beautiful than your Dulcinea del To
truth, if you do immediately and fairly c
will save your own life, and me the troub
it from you: and if you fight, and are va
me, all the satisfaction I expect is, that yo
arms, forbear going in quest of adventures
home to your house for the space of one
you shall live, without laying hand to you
profound peace, and profitable repose: whi
dound both to the improvement of your es
salvation of your soul: and if you shall v
my head shall lie at your mercy, the s
horse and arms shall be yours, and the fam
ploits shall be transferred from me to you
which is best for you, and answer me pr
this business must be dispatched this very

Don Quixote was surprised and amazed,
arrogance of the knight of the white moo

of his being challanged by him: and so, with
r composed, and countenance severe, he an-
l: Knight of the white moon, whose acheive-
have not as yet reached my ears, I dare swear
ver saw the illustrious Dulcinea; for, had you
er, I am confident you would have taken care
engage in this trial, since the sight of her must
ndeceived, and convinced you, that there never
nor ever can be, a beauty comparable to hers;
erefore, without giving you the lie, and, only
you are mistaken, I accept your challenge, with
orementioned conditions; and that upon the
hat the day allotted for this business may not first
: and out of the conditions I only except the
er of your exploits, because I do not know what
are, nor that they are: I am contented with my
such as they are. Take, then, what part of the
ou please, and I will do the like, and to whom
all give her,* saint Peter give his blessing.
knight of the white moon was discovered from
y, and the viceroy was informed that he was in
ence with Don Quixote de la Mancha. The
y, believing it was some new adventure, contriv-
Don Antonio Moreno, or by some other gentle-
f the town, immediately rode out to the strand,
panied by Don Antonio, and a great many other
men; and arrived just as Don Quixote had wheel-
sinante about, to take the necessary ground for
areer. The viceroy, perceiving they were both
to turn for the encounter, interposed, asking
what induced them to so sudden a fight. The
of the white moon answered: It was the prece-
of beauty; and told him, in a few words, what
d said to Don Quixote, and that the conditions
combat were agreed to on both sides. The vice-
ked Don Antonio in his ear, whether he knew
he knight of the white moon was, and whether
some jest designed to be put upon Don Quixote.
ntonio answered, that he neither knew who he
nor whether this challenge was in jest or earnest.
answer perplexed the viceroy, putting him in

---

aning victory. These are words used at the
e ceremony.

doubt whether he should suffer them to
combat: but, inclining rather to believe
thing but a jest, he went aside, saying:
other remedy, knights, but to confess or
signor Don Quixote persists in denyin
worship of the white moon in affirming, a
name. He of the white moon thanked th
courtly and discreet terms for the leave he
and Don Quixote did the same; who, rec
himself to heaven with all his heart, and to
nea (as was his custom at the beginning of t
that offered) wheeled about again to fetch
compass, because he saw his adversary did
and, without sound of trumpet or other warli
ment, to give the signal for the onset, they bo
their horses about at the same instant: and
white moon being the nimblest, met Don Q
two-thirds of the career, and there encounte
with such impetuous force (not touching him
lance, which he seemed to raise on purpose)
gave Rosinante and Don Quixote a perilous fall
ground. Presently he was upon him, and, clapp
lance to his visor, he said: Knight, you are vanqu
and a dead man, if you do not confess the cond
of our challenge. Don Quixote, bruised and stu
without lifting up his visor, as if he was speaking
within a tomb, in a feeble and low voice, said: D
nea del Toboso is the most beautiful woman in
world, and I the most unfortunate knight on earth,
it is not fit that my weakness shoud discredit
truth: knight, push on your lance, and take away
life, since you have spoiled me of my honour. By
means, quoth he of the white moon: live, live the fa
of the beauty of the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, in i
full lustre: all the satisfaction I demand is, that th
great Don Quixote retire home to his own town for
year, or till such time as I shall command, according
to our agreement before we began this battle. All this
was heard by the viceroy, Don Antonio, and many oth-
er persons there present; who also heard Don Quixote
reply, that since he required nothing of him to the pre-
judice of Dulcinea, he would perform all the rest like
a punctual and true knight.

This confession being made, he of the white moon

turned about his horse, and, making a bow with his hea to the viceroy, at a full gallop entered into the city The viceroy ordered Don Antonio to follow him, an by all means to learn who he was. They raised Do Quixote from the ground, and, uncovering his face found him pale, and in a cold sweat. Rosinante, ou of pure ill plight, could not stir for the present. San cho, quite sorrowful, and cast down, knew not what t do or say. He fancied all that had happened to be dream, and that all this business was matter of enchant ment: he saw his master vanquished, and under a obligation not to bear arms during a whole year: h imagined the light of the glory of his achievement obscured, and the hopes of his late promises dissipate as smoke by the wind: he was afraid Rosinante's bone were quite broken, and his master's disjointed, an wished it might prove no worse. Finally, Don Quixot was carried back to the city in a chair the viceroy ha commanded to be brought; and the viceroy also re turned thither, impatient to learn who the knight o the white moon was, who had left Don Quixote i such evil plight.

CHAP. XIII.

In which an account is given who the knight of th white moon was; with the liberty of Don Gregori and other accidents.

Don Antonio Moreno followed the knight of th white moon. A great number of boys also pursue and persecuted him, till they had lodged him in an in within the city. Don Antonio went in after him, bein desirous to know who he was. His squire came ou to receive and unarm him. He shut himself up in lower room, and with him Don Antonio, whose cak was dough, till he knew who he was. He of the whi moon perceiving that this gentleman would not lea *him, said: I* very well know, sir, the design of y *coming,* which is to learn who I am; and, bec *there is* no occasion for concealing it, while m *vant is* unarming me, I will inform you, witho *viating* a tittle from the truth. Know, sir, t

ıled the bachelor Sampson Carrasco: I am of the same town with Don Quixote de la Mancha, whose madness and folly move all that know him to compassion. Of those who had most pity for him, was I, and believing his recovery to depend upon his being quiet and staying at home in his own house, I contrived how to make him continue there. And so, about three months ago, I sallied forth to the highway like a knight-errant, styling [illegible] knight of the looking-glasses, designing [illegible] him, and vanquish him without doing him [illegible], the condition of our combat being, that the v[illegible]ed [illegible]ould remain at the discretion of the va[illegible]er: [illegible]d what I, concluding him already vanquished, intended to enjoin him, was that he should return to his village, and not stir out of it in a whole year; in which time he might be cured. But fortune ordained it otherwise; for he vanquished me, and tumbled me from my horse, and so my design did not take effect. He pursued his journey, and I returned home, vanquished, ashamed, and bruised with the fall, which was a very dangerous one. Nevertheless, I lost not the desire of finding him, and vanquishing him, as you have seen this day. And, as he is so exact and punctual in observing the laws of knight-errantry, he will doubtless keep that I have laid upon him, and will be as good as his word. This, sir, is the business; and I have nothing to add, but only to entreat you not to discover me, nor to let Don Quixote know who I am, that my good intentions may take effect, and his understanding be restored to a man who has a very good one, if the follies of chivalry do but leave him. Oh! sir, quoth Don Antonio, God forgive you the injury you have done the whole world, in endeavouring to restore to his senses the most diverting madman in it. Do you not see, sir, that the benefit of his recovery will not counterbalance the pleasure his extravagances afford? But I fancy that all signor bachelor's industry will not be sufficient to recover a man so consummately mad; and, were it not against the rule of charity, I would say, May Don Quixote never be recovered: for, by his cure, we not only lose his pleasantries, but those of his squire Sancho Panza *too; any one of* which is enough to make melancholy *herself merry*. Nevertheless, I will hold my peace

and tell him nothing, to try if I am right in suspecting that all signor Carrasco's diligence is likely to be fruitless. Carrasco answered, that, all things considered, the business was in a promising way, and he hoped for good success. Don Antonio, having offered his service in whatever else he pleased to command him, took his leave. The same day, the bachelor, having caused his armour to be tied upon the back of a mule, rode out of the city upon the same horse on which he entered the fight, and returned to his native place, nothing befalling him by the way worthy to be recorded in this faithful history. Don Antonio recounted to the viceroy all that Carrasco had told him; at which the viceroy was not much pleased, considering that Don Quixote's confinement would put an end to all that diversion, which his follies administered to those that knew him.

Six days Don Quixote lay in bed, chagrined, melancholy, thoughtful, and peevish, his imagination still dwelling upon the unhappy business of his defeat. Sancho strove to comfort him, and among other things, said: Dear sir, hold up your head, and be cheerful if you can, and give heaven thanks, that, though you got a swinging fall, you did not come off with a rib broken: and since you know that, They that will give must take, and that, There are not always bacon-flitches where there are pins; cry, a fig for the physician, since you have no need of his help in this distemper. Let us return home, and leave this rambling in quest of adventures through countries and places unknown: and if it be well considered, I am the greater loser, though your worship be the greater sufferer. I, who, with the government, quitted the desire of ever governing more, did not quit the desire of being an earl, which will never come to pass, if your worship refuses being a king by quitting the exercise of chivalry; and so my hopes vanish into smoke. Peace, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote, since you see my confinement and retirement is not to last above a year, and then I will resume my honourable profession, and shall be *want a kingdom* to win for myself, nor an earldom *bestow on you.* God hear it, quoth Sancho, and let *be deaf; for I* have always been told, that a good *pectation is* better than a bad possession.

They were thus discoursing, when Don Antonio entered with signs of great joy, saying: My reward, signor Don Quixote, for the good news I bring: Don Gregorio, and the renegado, who went to bring him, are in the harbour: in the harbour, do I say? by this time they must be come to the viceroy's palace, and will be here presently. Don Quixote was a little revived, and said: In truth, I was going to say I should be glad if it had fallen out q[illegible]therwise, that I might have been obliged to go ove[illegible] Barbary, where, by the force of my arm, I should h[illegible]given liberty, not only to Don Gregorio, but to all [illegible] christian captives that are in Barbary. But what [illegible] I say? wretch that I am! Am I not he who ir[illegible]uished? Am I not he who is overthrown? Am [illegible]he, who has it not in his power to take arms in [illegible]lvemonth? Why then do I promise? Why do I [illegible], if I am fitter to handle a distaff than a sword? No more, sir, quoth Sancho: let the hen live though she have the pip: To-day for you, and to-morrow for me: and as for these matters of encounters and bangs, never trouble your head about them; for, He that falls to-day may rise to-morrow, unless he has a mind to lie a-bed; I mean, by giving way to despondency, and not endeavouring to recover fresh spirits for fresh encounters. And pray sir, rise, and welcome Don Gregorio; for there seems to be a great bustle in the house, and by this time he is come.

He said the truth; for Don Gregorio and the renegado having given the viceroy an account of the expedition, Don Gregorio, impatient to see Anna Felix, was come with the renegado to Don Antonio's house; and though Don Gregorio, when he made his escape from Algiers, was in a woman's dress, he had exchanged it in the bark for that of a captive, who escaped with him. But in whatever dress he had come, he would have had the appearance of a person worthy to be loved, served, and esteemed; for he was above measure beautiful, and seemed to be about seventeen or eighteen years of age. Ricote and his daughter went out to meet him, the father with tears, and the daughter with modesty. The young couple did not embrace each other; for where there is much love, there are usually but few freedoms. The joint beauties of Don Gregorio and Anna Felix surprised all th

eholders. Silence spoke for the two lo
yes were the tongues that proclaimed tl
nodest sentiments. The renegado ac
ompany with the artifices and means he
d to bring off Don Gregorio. Don Greg
d the dangers and straits he was reduced
vomen he remained with, not in a tedio
ut in few words, whereby he shewed, tha
ion outstripped his years. In short, Rico
v paid and satisfied, as well the renegad
hat rowed at the oar. The renegado was
nd restored to the bosom of the church, a
en member, became clean and sound throu
nd repentance.

Two days after the viceroy and Don An
ulted together about the means how Anna
er father might remain in Spain, thinking i
er of inconvenience, that a daughter so mac
ian, and a father, to appearance so well
hould continue in the kingdom. Don Antoni
solicit the affair himself at court, being obli
ither about other business; intimating, t
eans of favour and bribery, many difficult mat
ere brought about. No quoth Ricote, who w
t at this discourse, there is nothing to be e
m favour or bribes; for with the great Ber
Velasco, count of Salazar, to whom his maje
n the charge of our expulsion, no entreat
nises, no bribes, no pity are of any avail: for
true he tempers justice with mercy, yet, b
ees the whole body of our nation tainted an
he rather makes use of burning caustics th
ointments; so that, by prudence, by sagac
nce, by terrors, he has supported on h
lers the weight of this great machin
ht it to due execution and perfection: ou
ratagems, diligence, and policies, not bei
d his Argus' eyes, continually open to s
f us stay, or lurk behind, that, like a co
ay hereafter spring up, and spread ve
rough Spain, already cleared, already fre
s our vast numbers kept the kingdom
roic resolution of the great Philip T
ard-of wisdom in committing this

the said Don Bernardino de Velasco! However, when I am at court, said Don Antonio, I will use all the diligence and means possible, and leave the success to heaven. Don Gregorio shall go with me, to comfort his parents under the affliction they must be in for his absence: Anna Felix shall stay at my house with my wife, or in a monastery; and I am sure the viceroy will be glad, that honest Ricote remain in his house, till he sees the success of my negotiation. The viceroy consented to all that was proposed. But Don Gregorio, knowing what passed, expressed great unwillingness to leave Anna Felix: but resolving to visit his parents, and to concert the means of returning for her, he came at length into the proposal. Anna Felix remained with Don Antonio's wife, and Ricote in the viceroy's house.

The day of Don Antonio's departure came, and that of Don Quixote's and Sancho's two days after, his fall not permitting him to travel further. At Don Gregorio's parting from Anna Felix, all was tears, sighs swoonings, and sobbings. Ricote offered Don Gregorio a thousand crowns, if he desired them: but he would accept only of five, that Don Antonio lent him, to be repaid when they met at court. With this they both departed; and Don Quixote and Sancho afterwards, as has been said; Don Quixote, unarmed, and in a travelling dress, and Sancho on foot, because Dapple was loaded with the armour.

CHAP. XIV.

Treating of matters, which he, who reads, will see; and he, who hears them read, will hear.

At going out of Barcelona, Don Quixote turned about to see the spot where he was overthrown, and said: Here stood Troy: here my misfortunes, not my cowardice, despoiled me of my acquired glory: here I experienced the fickleness of fortune; here the lustre of my exploits was obscured; and lastly, here fell my happiness, never to rise again. Which Sancho hearing, he said: It is as much the part of valiant minds, *dear sir, to be* patient under misfortunes, as to rejoice

in prosperity: and this I judge by myself; for as, when a governor, I was merry, now that I am a squire on foot, I am not sad: for I have heard say, that she, they commonly call Fortune is a drunken, capricious dame, and above all, very blind; so that she does not see what she is about, nor knows who she casts down, or whom she exalts. You are much of a philosopher, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, and talk very discreetly; I know not whence you had it. What I can tell you is, that there is no such thing in the world as Fortune, nor do the things which happen in it, be they good or bad, fall out by chance, but by the particular appointment of heaven; and hence comes the saying, that every man is the maker of his own fortune. I have been so of mine, but not with all the prudence necessary; and my presumption has succeeded accordingly: for I ought to have considered that the feebleness of Rosinante was not a match for the ponderous bulk of the knight of the white moon's steed. In short I adventured it; I did my best; I was overthrown and, though I lost my honour, I lost not, nor could I lose, the virtue of performing my promise. When I was a knight-errant, daring and valiant, by my works I gained credit to my exploits; and now, that I am but a walking squire, I will gain reputation to my words by performing my promise. March on then, friend Sancho, and let us pass at home the year of our noviciate, by which retreat we shall acquire fresh vigour, to return to the never-by-me-forgotten exercise of arms. Sir, answered Sancho, trudging on foot is no such pleasant thing, as to encourage or incite me to travel great days' journies; let us leave this armour hanging upon some tree, instead of a hanged man; and when I am mounted upon Dapple, my feet from the ground we will travel as your worship shall like and lead the way; for to think that I am to foot it, and make large stages, is to expect what cannot be. You have said well, Sancho, answered Don Quixote: hang up my armour for a trophy; and under them, or round about them, we will carve on the tree that which was written *on the trophy of* Orlando's arms:

"Let none presume these arms to move,
Who Roldan's fury dares not prove."

All this seems to me extremely right, answered Sancho, and, were it not for the want we should have of Rosinante upon the road, it would not be amiss to leave him hanging too. Neither him, nor the armour, replied Don Quixote, will I suffer to be hanged, that it may not be said—for good service, bad recompence. Your worship says well, answered Sancho; for, according to the opinion of the wise, the ass's fault should not be laid upon the pack-[illegible] and since your worship is in fault for this busin[illegible]ish yourself, and let not your fury spend itself u[illegible] already shattered and bloody armour, nor upo[illegible]ntleness of Rosinante, nor upon the tenderness [illegible]eet, making them travel more than they can bear.

In these reasonings and discourses they passed all that day, and even four more, without encountering any thing to put them out of their way. And, on the fifth, at entering into a village, they saw, at the door of an inn, a great number of people, who, it being a holiday, were there solacing themselves. When Don Quixote came up to them, a peasant said aloud: One of these two gentlemen, who are coming this way, and who know not the parties, shall decide our wager. That I will, answered Don Quixote, most impartially, when I am made acquainted with it. The business, good sir, quoth the peasant, is, that an inhabitant of this town, who is so corpulent that he weighs about twenty-three stone,* has challenged a neighbour, who weighs not above ten and a half, to run with him a hundred yards, upon condition of carrying equal weight; and the challenger, being asked how the weight should be made equal, said, that the challenged, who weighed but ten and a half, should carry thirteen stone of iron about him, and so both the lean and the fat would carry equal weight. Not so, quoth Sancho, immediately, before Don Quixote could answer: and to me, who have so lately left being a governor and a judge, as all the world knows, it belongs to resolve these doubts, and give my opinion in every controversy. Answer in a good hour, friend Sancho, quoth Don Quixote; for I

* "Eleven arrobas." The arroba is a quarter of a *hundred*, or twenty-five pounds; eleven of them make *two hundred* and seventy-five pounds.

am not fit to feed a cat,* my brain is so disturbed and turned topsy-turvy. With this licence, quoth Sancho to the country-fellows who crowded about him, gaping and expecting his decision: Brothers! The fat man's proportion is unreasonable, nor is there the least shadow of justice in it; for if it be true, what is commonly said, that the challenged may choose his weapons, it is not reasonable that the other should choose for him such as will hinder and obstruct his coming off conqueror: and therefore my sentence is, that the fat fellow, the challenger, pare away, slice off, or cut out, thirteen stone of his flesh, some where or other, as he shall think best and properest; and so, being reduced to ten and a half stone weight, he will be equal to, and matched exactly with his adversary; and so they may run upon even terms. I vow, quoth one of the peasants, who listened to Sancho's decision, this gentleman has spoke like a saint, and given sentence like a canon: but I warrant the fat fellow will have no mind to part with an ounce of his flesh, much less thirteen stone. The best way, answered another, will be not to run at all, that lean may not break his back with the weight, nor fat lose flesh; and let half the wager be spent in wine, and let us take these gentlemen to the tavern that has the best, and, Give me the cloak when it rains. I thank ye, gentlemen, answered Don Quixote, but cannot stay a moment; for melancholy thoughts, and disastrous circumstances, oblige me to travel faster than ordinary. And so, clapping spurs to Rosinante, he went on, leaving them in admiration both at the strangeness of his figure,* and the discretion of his man (for such they took Sancho to be;) and another of the peasants said: If the man be so discreet what must the master be? I will lay a wager, if they go to study at Salamanca, in a trice they will come to

* Alluding to the custom in Spain of an old or disabled soldier's carrying offals of tripe or liver about the streets to feed the cats.—Poor Don Quixote's arrogance is mightily abated by his being vanquished.

* *Cervantes seems to have forgot that Don Quixote is now in the usual garb of a traveller, and therefore not so strange a figure as formerly, when cased in armour.*

throw. He staid, as has been said, under the shade of a tree, where reflections, like flies about honey, assaulted and stung him; some dwelling upon the disenchantment of Dulcinea, and others upon the life he was to lead in his forced retirement. Sancho came up, and commended to him the generosity of the lacquey Tosilos. Is it possible, Sancho, said Don Quixote, that you persist in thinking that he is a real lacquey! You seem to have quite forgot that you saw Dulcinea converted and transformed into a country-wench, and the knight of the looking-glasses into the bachelor Sampson Carrasco: all the work of enchanters, who persecute me. But tell me, did you inquire of this Tosilos what God has done with Altisidora; whether she still bewails my absence, or has already left in the hands of oblivion the amorous thoughts that tormented her whilst I was present? Mine, answered Sancho, were not of a kind to afford me leisure to inquire after fooleries: body of me, sir, is your worship now in a condition to be inquiring after other folks' thoughts, especially amorous ones? Look you, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote, there is a great deal of difference between what is done out of love, and what out of gratitude: it is very possible a gentleman may not be in love; but it is impossible, strictly speaking, he should be ungrateful. Altisidora, to all appearance, loved me: she gave me three night-caps you know of: she wept at my departure: she cursed me, vilified me, and, in spite of shame, complained publicly of me; all signs that she adored me; for the anger of lovers usually ends in maledictions. I had neither hopes to give her, nor treasures to offer her; for mine are all engaged to Dulcinea, and the treasures of knights-errant, like those of fairies, are delusions, not realities, and I can only give her these remembrances I have of her, without prejudice, however, to those I have of Dulcinea, whom you wrong, through your remissness in whipping yourself, and in disciplining that flesh of yours (may I see it devoured by wolves!) which had rather preserve itself for the worms, than for the relief of that poor lady. Sir, answered Sancho, if I must speak the truth, I cannot persuade myself that the lashing of my posteriors can have any thing to do with the disenchanting of the enchanted; for it is as if one should

ay, If your head aches, anoint your knee-pans. At
east I dare swear, that in all the histories your wor-
hip has read, treating of knight-errantry, you never
net with any body disenchanted by whipping. But,
e that as it will, I will lay it on, when the humour
akes me, and time gives me conveniency of chastising
nyself. God grant it, answered Don Quixote, and
eaven give you grace to see the duty and obligation
ou are under to aid my lady, who is yours too, since
ou are mine.

With these discourses they went on their way,
hen they arrived at the very place and spot, where
hey had been trampled upon by the bulls. Don
Quixote knew it again, and said to Sancho: This is the
neadow where we lighted on the gay shepherdesses and
allant shepherds, who intended to revive in it, and im-
tate, the pastoral Arcadia; a thought as new as ingen-
ous; in imitation of which, if you approve it, I could
rish, O Sancho, we might turn shepherds, at least for
he time I must live retired. I will buy sheep, and all
ther materials necessary for the pastoral employment;
nd I calling myself the shepherd Quixotiz, and you
he shepherd Panzino, we will range the mountains,
he woods and meadows, singing here and complaining
here, drinking the liquid crystal of the fountains, or
he limpid brooks, or of the mighty rivers. The oaks
with a plentiful hand shall give their sweetest fruit;
he trunks of the hardest cork-trees shall afford us
eats; the willows shall furnish shade, and the rose-
cent; the spacious meadow shall yield us carpets of a
housand colours; the air, clear and pure, shall sup-
ply breath; the moon and stars afford light, maugre the
larkness of the night: singing shall furnish pleasure,
nd complaining yield delight: Apollo shall provide
erses, and love conceits; with which we shall make
ourselves famous and immortal, not only in the pres-
nt, but in future ages. Before God, quoth Sancho,
his kind of life squares and corners with me exactly.*
Besides, no sooner will the bachelor Sampson Carras-
co, and master Nicholas the barber, have well seen it,
ut they will have a mind to follow, and turn shepherds

* "*Quadrado y esquinado*:" alluding to the corn
ne of a building, which answers both ways.

with us, and God grant that the priest hi
clination to make one in the fold, he is of
per, and such a lover of mirth. You ha
well, quoth Don Quixote; and the bachel
Carrasco, if he enters himself into the past
as doubtless he will, may call himself the sh
sonio, or Carrascon. Nicholas the barber
ed Niculoso, as old Boscan called himself
As for the priest, I know not what name t
on him, unless it be some derivative fror
sion, calling him the shepherd Curiambe.†
shepherdesses, whose lovers we are to be,
and choose their names as we do pears; a
of my lady quadrates alike with a sheph
princess, I need not trouble myself ab
another, that may suit her better. You,
give yours what name you please. I do no
swered Sancho, to give mine any other th
which will fit her fat sides well, and is r
too, since her name is Teresa. Besides,
to celebrate her in verse, I shall discover
desires: for I am not for looking in other
for better bread than made of wheat. As fo
it will not be proper he should have a shep
he may set a good example; and if the bac
son will have one, his soul is at his own dis

God be my aid! quoth Don Quixote,
shall we lead, friend Sancho! what a w
pipes shall we hear! what pipes of Zamora
bourets! what tabors! and what rebeck
to all these different musics be added the
shall have almost all the pastoral instrume
are your albogues? demanded Sancho;
heard them named, nor ever saw one of th
life. Albogues, answered Don Quixote,
plates of brass like candlesticks, which, b
and struck against each other, give a sound
agreeable, or harmonious, yet not offensive
ing well enough with the rusticity of th
pipe. And this name Albogues is Moori

* In plain English, "as if Mr. Wood shou
self Mr. Grove.

† *From cura,* a parish priest.

ıose in Spanish that begin *al:* as Almoaca, Almorcar, lhombra, Alguazil, Alucema, Almacen, Alcancia, and ıe like, with very few more: and our language has ıly three Moorish words ending in *i*, namely, Borceıi, Zaquicami, and Maravedi: Alheli and Alfaqui, as ell for the beginning with *al*, as ending in *i*, are nown to be Arabic. This I have told you by the bye, ıe occasion of naming albogues having brought it into ıy mind. One main help, probably, we shall have toards perfecting this profession, ie, that I, as you now, am somewhat of a poet, and the bachelor Sampon Carrasco an extreme good one. Of the priest I ıy nothing: but I will venture a wager, he has the oints and collar of a poet;* and that master Nicholas ıe barber has them too, I make no doubt; for most or ll of that faculty are players on the guitar and songıakers. I will complain of absence: you shall extol ourself for a constant lover: the shepherd Carrasco ıall lament his being disdained; and the priest Curimbro may say or sing whatever will do him most serice: and so the business will go on as well as heart an wish.

To which Sancho answered: I am so unlucky, sir, ıat I am afraid I shall never see the day wherein I ıall be engaged in this employment. O what neat ooden spoons shall I make when I am a shepherd! hat crumbs! what cream! what garlands! what pasoral gimcracks! which, though they do not procure ıe the reputation of being wise, will not fail to procure ıe that of being ingenious. My daughter Sanchica ıall bring us our dinner to the sheep-fold: but have a are of that; she is a very sightly wo , and sheperds there are, who are more of the ave than the ool; and I would not have my girl come for wool, and eturn back shorn: and your loves, and wanton desires, re as frequent in fields as in the cities, and to be found ı shepherd's cottages, as well as in king's palaces: nd, Take away the occasion, and you take away the n: and, What the eye views not, the heart rues not:

* Formerly, in Spain, the men of q wore loose oats, sloped down before and unbutt under which *ppeared the rich* waistcoat, and its terminatir *two points.*

A leap from behind a bush has more force t
prayer of a good man.† No more proverbs, go
cho, quoth Don Quixote; for any one of those y
mentioned is sufficient to let us know your m
I have often advised you not to be so prodigal
proverbs, and to keep a strict hand over them:
seems, it is preaching in the desert, and, The n
mother whips me, the more I rend and tear. M
answered Sancho, your worship makes good t
ing, The kettle called the pot black-arse.*
reproving me for speaking proverbs, and yo
them yourself by couples. Look you, Sancho,
ed Don Quixote, I use mine to the purpose, an
I speak them, they are as fit as a ring to the
but you drag them in by head and shoulders.
member right, I have already told you, that p
are short sentences, drawn from experience,
speculations of our ancient sages; and the prov
is not to the purpose, is rather an absurdity tha
tence. But enough of this; and, since night ap
es, let us retire a little way out of the high road
we will pass the night, and God knows what wil
morrow.

They retired: they supped late and ill, much
Sancho's inclination, who now began to reflec
the difficulties attending knight-errantry, amon
and mountains; though now and then plenty
itself in castles and houses, as at Don Diego de
da's, at the wedding of the rich Camacho, and
Antonio Moreno's: but he considered it was no
ble it should be always day, nor always night;
he spent the remainder of that sleeping, and his
waking.

---

* That is, A robber gets your money by force
than a poor man by asking alms.

† Literally, "The frying-pan said to the kettle
away, thou black thing!"

CHAP. XVI.

Of the bristled adventure which befel Don Quixote.*

THE night was somewhat dark, though the moon was in the heavens, but not in a part where she could be seen; for sometimes signora Diana takes a trip to the antipodes, and leaves the mountains black, and the valleys in the dark. Don Quixote gave way to nature, taking his first sleep, without giving place to a second quite the reverse of Sancho, who never had a second, one sleep lasting him from night to morning; an evident sign of his good constitution, and few cares. Those of Don Quixote kept him so awake, that he awakened Sancho, and said: I am amazed, Sancho, at the insensibility of your temper; you seem to me to be made of marble, or brass, not susceptible of any emotion or sentiment: I awake, while you sleep; I weep, when you are singing; I am fainting with hunger, while you are lazy and unwieldy with pure cramming: it is the part of good servants to share in their master's pains, and to be touched with what affects them, were it but for the sake of decency. Behold the serenity of the night, and the solitude we are in, inviting us, as it were, to intermingle some watching with our sleep. Get up, by your life, and go a little apart from hence, and, with a willing mind and a good courage, give yourself three or four hundred lashes, upon account, for the disenchantment of Dulcinea: and this I ask as a favour; for I will not come to wrestling with you again, as I did before, because I know the weight of your arms. After you have laid them on, we will pass the remainder of the night in singing, I my absence and you your constancy, beginning from this moment our pastoral employment, which we are to follow in our village. Sir answered Sancho, I am of no religous order, to rise out of the midst of my sleep, and discipline myself; neither do I think one can pass from the pain of whipping to music. Suffer me to sleep, and urge not this whipping myself, lest you force me to swear never to touch a hair of my coat.

* *i. e.* Adventure of the hogs.

much less of my flesh. O hardened soul! Quixote; O remorseless squire; O bread il and favours ill considered, those I have alre ed upon you, and those I still intend to b you! To me you owe, that you have been a and to me you owe, that you are in a fare wa an earl, or of having some title equivalent accomplishment of these things will be delaye er than the expiration of this year; for "I bras spero lucem." I know not what that n plied Sancho: I only know, that while I am have neither fear nor hope, neither trouble r and, blessings on him who invented sleep, t that covers all human thoughts, the food tha hunger, the drink that quenches thirst, the warms cold, the cold that moderates the lastly, the general coin that purchases all t balance and weight that equals the shepherd king, and the simple with the wise. One as I have heard, sleep has in it, namely, tha bles death; for between a man asleep and a there is but little difference. I never heard cho, quoth Don Quixote, talk so elegantly whence I come to know the truth of the pr often apply, Not with whom thou art bred whom thou art fed. Dear master of mine, re cho, it is not I that am stringing of proverbs they fall from your worship's mouth also b faster than from me; only between yours there is this difference, that your worship' the proper season, and mine out of season short, they are all proverbs.

They were thus employed, when they he of deaf noise, and harsh sound, spreading itse all those valleys. Don Quixote started up his hand to his sword; and Sancho squatted do Dapple, and clapped the bundle of armour on c him, and the ass's pannel on the other, trembli with fear than Don Quixote with surprise. increased by degrees, and came nearer to tremblers, one at least so, for the other's cou ready sufficiently known. Now the business *certain fellows* were driving above six hundr *sell at a fair,* and were upon the road wi

·; and so great was the din they made with
· and blowing, that they deafened the ears of
ixote and Sancho, who could not presently
: occasion of it. The far spreading and grunt-
came crowding on, and, without any respect
thority of Don Quixote, or to that of Sancho,
over them both, demolishing Sancho's en-
ınt, and overthrowing, not only Don Quixote,
ıante to boot. The crowding, the gruntling,
'ing on of those unclean animals put into con-
nd overturned, the pack-saddle, the armour,
Rosinante, Sancho, and Don Quixote. San-
p as well as he could, and desired his master
im his sword, saying, he would kill half a doz-
ɔse unmannerly gentlemen swine, for such by
he knew them to be. Said Don Quixote to
t them alone friend; for this affront is a pun-
for my sin; and it is a just judgment of heav-
wild dogs should devour, wasps sting, and hogs
ıpon a vanquished knight-errant. It is also, I
a judgment of heaven, answered Sancho, that
ıres of vanquished knights-errant should be
flies, eaten up by lice, and besieged by hun-
we squires were the sons of the knights we
very near of kin to them, it would be no won-
e punishment of their faults should overtake
fourth generation: but what have the Panzas
th the Quixotes? Well let us compose our-
ɟain, and sleep out the little remainder of the
d God will send us a new day, and we shall
ter luck. Sleep you, Sancho, answered Don
; for you were born to sleep, whilst I, who
to watch, in the space between this and day,
reins to my thoughts, and cool their heat in a
drigal, which unknown to you, I composed to
ı my mind. Methinks, quoth Sancho, the
which give way to the making of couplets,
e many. Couplet it as much as your worship
and I will sleep as much as I can. Then tak-
ıch ground as he wanted, he bundled himself
'ell into a sound sleep, neither suretyship, nor
r any troubles disturbing him. Don Quixote,
gainst a beech or cork-tree (for Cid Hamet
ll does not distinguish what tree it was)
of his own sighs, sung as follows:—

O l ove, when, sick of heartfelt grief,
I sigh, and drag thy cruel chain,
T Death I fly, the sure relief
f those who groan in ling'ring pain

But coming to the fatal gates,
he port in this my sea of woe,
T joy I feel new life creates,
s brisker flow.

Thu ur I live,
A n my breath :
Stra e, that thus can give
A ving death !

He acc ntza with a multitu
sighs, and e one whose heart
pierced th of being vanquished
by the absence of Dulcinea. Now the day app
and the sun began to dart his beams in Sancho's
He awaked, roused, and shook himself, and stre
his lazy limbs, and beheld what havoc the hogs
made in his cupboard ; and cursed the drove and s
body else besides.

Finally, they both set forward on their jou
and toward the decline of the afternoon, they
covered about half a score men on horseback
four or five on foot advancing toward them.
Quixote's heart leaped with surprise and San
with fear ; for the men that were coming up ca
spears and targets, and advanced in a very wa
array. Don Quixote turned to Sancho, and
Sancho, if I could but make use of my arms, an
promise had not tied up my hands, this machine t
coming toward us I would make no more of t
would of so many tarts and cheesecakes. But it
be something else than what we fear. By this
the horsemen were come up : and lifting up their
ces, without speaking a word, they surrounded
Quixote, and clapped their spears to his back
breast, threatening to kill him. One of those on
putting his finger to his mouth, to signify tha
should be silent, laid hold on Rosinante's bridle
drew him out of the road ; and the others on foot,
ing Sancho and Dapple before them, all keeping

velfous silence, following the steps of him who led Don Quixote, who had a mind three or four times to ask, whither they were carrying him, or what they would have. But scarcely did he begin to move his lips, when they were ready to close them with the points of their spears. And the like befel Sancho; for no sooner did he shew an inclination to talk, than one of those on foot pricked him with a goad, and did as much to Dapple, as if he had a mind to talk too. It grew night; they mended their pace; the fear of the two prisoners increased, especially when they heard the fellows ever and anon say to them: On, on, ye Troglodytes; peace, ye barbarous slaves; pay, ye Anthropophagi; complain not, ye Scythians; open not your eyes, ye murdering Polyphemuses, ye butcherly lions; and other the like names, with which they tormented the ears of the miserable pair, master and man. Sancho went along, saying to himself: we Ortolans? we Barber's slaves? we Andrew popinjays? we Citadels? we Polly famouses? I do not like these names at all; this is a bad wind for winnowing our corn; the whole mischief comes upon us together, like kicks to a cur; and would to God this disventurous adventure, that threatens us, may end in no worse! Don Quixote marched along, quite confounded, and not being able to conjecture, by all the conclusions he could make, why they called them by those reproachful names; from which he could only gather, that no good was to be expected and much harm to be feared. In this condition, about an hour after night-fall they arrived at a castle, which Don Quixote presently knew to be the duke's where he had so lately been. God be my aid! said he, as soon as he knew the place what will this end in? In this house all is courtesy and civil usage: but to the vanquished good is converted into bad, and bad into worse. They entered into the principal court of the castle, and saw it decorated and set out in such a manner, that their admiration increased, and their fear doubled, as will be seen in the following chapter.

CHAP. XVII.

Of the newest and strangest adventure of all that befel Don Quixote in the whole course of this grand history.

THE horsemen alighted, and, together with those on foot, taking Sancho and Don Quixote forcibly in their arms, carried them into the court-yard, round which near a hundred torches were placed in sockets, and above five hundred lights about the galleries of the court; insomuch that, in spite of the night, which was somewhat darkish, there seemed to be no want of the day. In the middle of the court was erected a tomb, about two yards from the ground, and over it a large canopy of black velvet; round which, upon its steps, were burning above a hundred wax tapers in silver candlesticks. On the tomb was seen the corpse of a damsel so beautiful, that her beauty made death itself appear beautiful. Her head lay upon a cushion of gold brocade, crowned with a garland interwoven with odoriferous flowers of divers kinds; her hands laying crosswise upon her breast, and between them a branch of never-fading victorious palm. On one side of the court was placed a theatre, and in two chairs were seated two personages, whose crowns on their heads, and sceptres in their hands, denoted them to be kings, either real or feigned. On the side of the theatre, to which the ascent was by steps, stood two other chairs; upon which they who brought in the prisoners, seated Don Quixote and Sancho, all this in profound silence, and by signs giving them both to understand they must be silent too: but, without bidding, they held their peace; for the astonishment they were in at what they beheld tied up their tongues. And now two great persons ascended the theatre with a numerous attendance, whom Don Quixote presently knew to be the duke and duchess whose guest he had been. They seated themselves in two very rich chairs, close by those who seemed to be kings. Who would not have admired at all this, especially considering that Don Quixote had now perceived that the corpse upon the tomb was that of the fair Altisidora? At the duke and duchess's ar

cending the theatre, Don Quixote and Sancho ros
and made them a profound reverence, and their g
deur's returned it by bowing their heads a little.
this juncture, an officer crossed the place, and con
to Sancho, threw over him a robe of black buckr
all painted over with flames, and taking off his c
put on his head a pasteboard mitre three foot hi
like those used by the penitents of the inquisition; b
ding him in his ear not to unsew his lips; if he did th
would clap a gag in his mouth, or kill him. Sanc
viewed himself from top to toe, and saw himself a
over in flames; but finding they did not burn him, h
cared not two farthings. He took off his mitre, an
saw it all painted over with devils: he put it on again
saying within himself; Well enough yet, these do no
burn me, nor those carry me away. Don Quixote also
surveyed him, and, though fear suspended his senses,
he could not but smile to behold Sancho's figure.

And now, from under the tomb, proceeded a low and
pleasing sound of flutes; which not being interrupted
by any human voice (for Silence herself kept silence
there) the music sounded both soft and amorous. Then
on a sudden, by the cushion of the seemingly dead
body, appeared a beautiful youth in a Roman habit,
who, in a sweet and clear voice, to the sound of a harp,
which he played on himself, sung the two following
stanzas.—

Till heaven, in pity to the weeping world,
Shall give Altisidora back to day,
By Quixote's scorn to realms of Pluto hurl'd,
Her every charm to cruel death a prey;
While matrons throw their gorgeous robes away,
To mourn a nymph by cold disdain betray'd:
To the complaining lyre's enchanting lay,
I'll sing the praises of this hapless maid
sweeter notes than Thracian Orpheus ever play'd.

Nor shall my numbers with my life expire,
Or this world's light confine the boundless song:
To thee, bright maid! in death I'll touch the ly
And to my soul the theme shall still belong.
When freed from clay, the flitting ghosts amo
spirit glides the Stygian shores around,

Though the cold hand of Death has seal
Thy praise the' infernal caverns shall
And Lethe's sluggish waves move slower

Enough, said one of the supposed k
divine chanter; for there would be no e
ing to us the death and graces of the p
dora, not dead, as the ignorant world
alive in the mouth of fame, and in the
cho Panza here present must pass throu
her to the lost light; and therefore, O R
who with me judgest in the dark cav
since thou knowest all that is decreed b
ble destinies, about bringing this dam
speak and declare it instantly, that the
expect from her revival may not be defa
ly had Minos, judge and companion of R
said this, when Rhadamanthus, rising up
officers of this household, high and l
small, rise one after another, and seal
with four and twenty twitches, and his
with twelve pinches and six pricks of a
performance of this ceremony consists t
of Altisidora. Which Sancho Panza hea
silence, and said: I vow to God, I will n
face be scratch, nor my flesh be handl
turn Turk: Body of me; what has hand
tenance to do with the resurrection o
The old woman has had a taste, and n
waters Dulcinea is enchanted, and I
ped to disenchant her; and now Alti
some distemper it pleases God to send
must be brought to life again by givin
twenty twitches, and make a sieve of my
ing it with pins, and pinching my arms b
Put these jests upon a brother-in-law
dog, and tus, tus, will not do with me
die, then, quoth Rhadamanthus, in a l
lent, thou tiger; humble thyself, thou
suffer, and be silent, since no impossi
quired of thee; and set not thyself t
difficulties of this business: twitched
pricked thou shalt see thyself, and pinc
groan. *Ho, I say*, officers, execute m

world, you must not lay your hand to your sword to d
fend me, unless you see that they who assault me a
vile mob and mean scoundrels; in that case you m
assist me: but if they should be knights, it is in r
wise lawful, nor allowed by the laws of chivalry, th
you should intermeddle, until you are dubbed a knigh
I assure you, Sir, answered Sancho, your worship sha
be obeyed most punctually herein, and the rather, b
cause I am naturally very peaceable, and an enemy
thrusting myself into brangles and squabbles: but i
all that, as to what regards the defence of my ow
person, I shall make no great account of those sam
laws, since both divine and human allow every one
defend himself against whoever would annoy him.
say no less, answered Don Quixote; but in the bus
ness of assisting me against knights, you must restrai
and keep in your natural impetuosity. I say, I will d
so, answered Sancho; and I will observe this prece
as religiously as the Lord's day.

As they were thus discoursing, there appeared in th
road two monks of the order of St. Benedict, mount
upon two dromedaries; for the mules whereon th
rode were not much less. They wore travelling mask
and carried umbrellas. Behind them came a coac
and four or five men on horseback, who accompani
it, with two muleteers on foot. There was in th
coach, as it was afterwards known, a certain Biscai
lady going to Seville to her husband, who was the
ready to embark for the Indies in a very honourab
post. The monks came not in her company, thoug
they were travelling the same road. But scarcely h
Don Quixote espied them, when he said to his squir
either I am deceived, or this is likely to prove the mo
famous adventure that ever was seen; for those blac
bulks that appear yonder must be, and without dou
are, enchanters, who are carrying away some princes
whom they have stolen, in that coach; and I am obli
ed to redress this wrong to the utmost in my powe
This may prove a worse job than the windmills. sa
Sancho: pray, Sir, take notice, that those are Ben
dictine monks, and the coach must belong to sov
travellers. Pray, hearken to my advice, and hav
care what you do, and let not the devil deceive
I have already told you, Sancho, answered Don

ote, that you know little of the business of adventures what I say is true, and you will see it presently. And so saying, he advanced forward, and planted himself in the midst of the highway, by which the monks were to pass; and when they were so near, that he supposed they could hear what he said, he cried out with a loud voice: Diabolical and monstrous race, either instantly release the high-born princesses, whom you are carrying away in that coach against their wills, or prepare for instant death, as the just chastisement of your wicked deeds.* The monks stopped their mules, and stood admiring, as well at the figure of Don Quixote, as at his expressions; to which they answered: Signor cavalier, we are neither diabolical nor monstrous, but a couple of monks of the Benedictine order, who are travelling on our own business, and are entirely ignorant whether any princesses are carried away by force in that coach, or not. Soft words do nothing with me; for I know ye, treacherous scoundrels, said Don Quixote: and without staying for any other reply, he clapped spurs to Rosinante, and with his lance couched, ran at the foremost monk with such fury and resolution, that, if he had not slid down from his mule, he would have brought him to the ground in spite of his teeth, and wounded to boot, if not killed outright.

The second monk seeing his comrade treated in this manner, clapped spurs to his mule's sides, and began to scour along the plain, lighter than the wind itself. Sancho Panza, seeing the monk on the ground, leaped nimbly from his ass, and running to him, began to take off his habit. In the mean while the monk's two lacqueys coming up, asked him why he was stripping their master of his clothes? Sancho answered, that they were his lawful perquisites, as being the spoils of the battle, which his lord Don Quixote had just won. The lacqueys, who did not understand raillery, nor what

* The usual style of defiance in the old romances. So Paciano overtakes the knights, who are carrying off prince Manireso, on a bier, sorely wounded, and in a loud tone cries out; Hold, false and traitorous knights, for by the order of knighthood, which I profess, you shall pay dearly for the villany you have committed, &c. "History of D. Polindo," ch. i.

neant by spoils or battles, seeing Don Quixote at
ance, talking with those in the coach, fell up-
ncho, and threw him down, and, leaving him not
in his beard, gave him a hearty kicking, and left
tretched on the ground, breathless, and senseless.
without losing a minute, the monk got upon his
again, trembling, and terribly frighted, and as
s death; and no sooner was he mounted, but he
d after his companion, who stood waiting at a
listance, to see what would be the issue of that
e encounter: but being unwilling to wait the
, they went on their way, crossing themselves of-
than if the devil had been close at their heels.
Quixote, as was said, stood talking to the lady in
oach, saying: Your beauty, dear lady, may dis-
of your person as pleaseth you best; for your
ty ravishers lie prostrate on the ground, over-
n by my invincible arm: and that you may not
any pains to learn the name of your deliverer,
, that I am called Don Quixote de la Mancha,
t-errant and adventurer, and captive to the peer-
nd beauteous Dulcinea del Toboso; and, in re-
of the benefit you have received at my hands,
lesire, is, that you would return to Toboso, and,
name present yourself before that lady, and tell
hat I have done to obtain your liberty.

that Don Quixote said was overheard by a cer-
quire who accompanied the coach, a Biscainer,
nding he would not let the coach go forward, but
d upon its immediately returning to Toboso, flew
n Quixote, and, taking hold of his lance, address-
n in bad Castilian and worse Biscaine, after this
er: Begone, cavalier, and the devil go with thee:
ar by that God that made me, if thou dost not
he coach, thou forfeitest thy life, as I am a Bis-
. Don Quixote understood him very well, and
great calmness answered: Wert thou a gentle-
as thou art not, I would before now have chastis-
r folly and presumption, thou pitiful slave. To
the Biscainer replied: I no gentleman! I swear
great God thou liest, as I am a christian; if
wilt throw away thy lance, and draw thy sword,
halt see I will make no more of thee than a ca
a *mouse*. Biscainer by land, gentleman by se

... manner,
alighted from his mule, wi
of hackneys, was not to
only time to draw his swor
him that he was close to t
he snatched a cushion, whi
and immediately to it they
mortal enemies. The rest o
made peace between them;
the Biscainer swore in his gi
not let him finish the comba
tress, and every body that offe
lady of the coach, amazed an
saw, bid the coachman put a l
so sat at a distance, beholdin
in the progress of which, th
Quixote such a huge stroke o
and above his buckler, that, had
of mail, he had cleft him dow
Quixote feeling the weight of th
cried out aloud, saying. O lady
flower of all beauty, succour th
satisfy thy great goodness, expos
orous extremity. The saying t
sword, the covering himself well
falling furiously on the Biscainer,
moment, he resolving to venture
one single bl...

not, upon the faith of an honest man, you shall see what you were born to.

Now there appeared, coming in procession along the court, six duennas, four of them with spectacles, and all of them with their right hands lifted up, and four fingers breadth of their wrists naked, to make their hands seem the longer, as is now the fashion. Scarcely had Sancho laid his eyes on them, when, bellowing like a bull, he said: I might, perhaps let all the world beside handle me: but to consent that duennas touch me, by no means; let them cat-claw my face, as my master was served in this very castle; let them pierce my body through and through with the points of the sharpest daggers; let them tear off my flesh with red-hot pincers; and I will endure it patiently, to serve these noble persons: but, to let duennas touch me, I will never consent, though the devil should carry me away. Don Quixote also broke silence, saying to Sancho: Be patient, son; oblige these noble persons, and give many thanks to heaven, for having infused such virtue into your person, that, by its martyrdom, you disenchant the enchanted, and raise the dead. By this time the duennas were got about Sancho; and he, being mollified and persuaded, and seating himself well in his chair, held out his face and beard to the first, who gave him a twitch well sealed, and then made him a profound reverence. Less complaisance, less daubing, mistress duenna, quoth Sancho; for, before God, your fingers smell of vinegar. In short, all the duennas sealed him, and several others of the house pinched him: but what he could not bear, was, the pricking of the pins; and so up he started from his seat, quite out of all patience, and, catching hold of a lighted torch that was near him, he laid about him with it, putting the duennas, and all his executioners to flight, and saying: Avaunt, ye infernal ministers; for I am not made of brass, to be insensible of such extraordinary torments.

Upon this Altisidora, who could not but be tired with lying so long upon her back, turned herself on one side: which the by-standers perceiving, almost all of them with one voice, cried: Altisidora is alive, Altisidora *lives*. Then Rhadamanthus bid Sancho *laid aside his* wrath, since they had already attained

not meddle with me; else, by the living God, all
out.

And now Altisidora had seated herself uprigl
the tomb, and at the same instant the waits struc
accompanied by flutes, and the voices of all, c
aloud: Live Altisidora, Altisidora live. The duk
duchess and the kings Minos and Rhadamanthus,
up. and, all in a body, with Don Quixote, and Sa
went to receive Altisidora, and help her down fro
tomb: who counterfeiting a person fainting, inc
her head to the duke and duchess, and to the l
and looking askew at Don Quixote, said: God fo
you, unrelenting knight, through whose cruelty I
been in the other world, to my thinking, above a
sand years; and thee I thank, O most compassi
squire of all the globe contains, for the life I e
From this day, friend Sancho, six of my smocks
your service, to be made into so many shirts for
self; and, if they are not all whole, at least the
all clean. Sancho, with his mitre in his hand, a
knee on the ground, kissed her hand. The duk
dered it to be taken from him, and his cap to be re
ed him, and his own garment instead of the fla
robe. Sancho begged the duke to let him kee
mitre and frock, having a mind to carry them
own country, in token and memory of this unhea

* *That is, toil upon toil, and nothing to sweete*
† To be slain for the use of others.

adventure. The duchess replied, he should have them, for he knew how much she was his friend. Then the duke ordered the court to be cleared and every body to retire to their own apartment, and that Don Quixote and Sancho should be conducted to their old lodgings.

CHAP. XVIII.

Which follows the seventeenth, and treats of matters indispensably necessary to the perspicuity of this history.

SANCHO slept that night on a truckle-bed, in the same chamber with Don Quixote; a thing he would have excused, if he could; for he well knew his master would disturb his sleep with questions and answers, and he was not much disposed to talk; the smart of his past sufferings being still present to him and an obstruction to the free use of his tongue: and he would have liked better to have lain in a hovel alone, than in that rich apartment in company. His fear proved so well founded, and his suspicion so just, that, scarcely was his master got into bed, when he said: What think you, Sancho, of this night's adventure? Great and mighty is the force of rejected love, as your own eyes can testify, which saw Altisidora dead, by no other darts, no other sword, nor any other warlike instrument, nor by deadly poison, but merely by the consideration of the rigour and disdain, with which I always treated her. She might have died in a good hour, as much as she pleased, and how she pleased, answered Sancho; and she might have left me in my own house, since I neither made her in love, nor ever disdained her in my life. I know not, nor can I imagine how it can be, that the recovery of Altisidora, a damsel more whimsical than discreet, should have any thing to do (as I have already said) with the torturing of Sancho Panza. Now indeed I plainly and distinctly perceive, there are enchanters and enchantments in the world, from which good Lord, deliver me, since I know not how to deliver myself. But, for the present, I beseech your worship to let me sleep, and ask me no m

questions, unless you have a mind I should j
self out of the window. Sleep, friend Sancho
ed Don Quixote, if the pin-prickings, pinc
twitchings, you have received, will give y
No smart, replied Sancho, came up to the
the twitchings, and for no other reason, but bec
were given by duennas, confound them!
more I beseech your worship to let me sleep;
is the relief of those who are uneasy awake.
quoth Don Quixote, and God be with you.

They both fell asleep, and in this interval,
mete, author of this grand history, had a
write, and give an account, of what moved
and duchess to raise the edifice of the afore
contrivance; and says, that the bachelor Sam
rasco, not forgetting how, when knight of th
glasses he was vanquished and overthrow
Quixote, which defeat and overthrow, baffled
stop to all his designs, had a mind to try
again, hoping for better success than the p
so, informing himself by the page, who br
letter and presents to Teresa Panza, Sanc
where Don Quixote was, he procured fresl
and a horse, and painted a white moon on
carrying the whole magazine upon a he-mule,
ducted by a peasant, not Thomas Cecial,
squire, lest Sancho Panza or Don Quixo
know him. He arrived at the duke's castle
formed him what way and route Don Qu
taken, to be present at the tournaments of
He also related to him the jests that had been
him, with the contrivance for the disenchar
Dulcinea, at the expense of Sancho's poste
short, he gave him an account, how Sancho h
ed upon his master, making him believe that
was enchanted and transformed into a countr
and how the duchess his spouse had persuade
that he himself was deceived, and that Dulc
really enchanted; at which the bachelor lau
wondered not a little, considering as well t
ness and simplicity of Sancho, as the extreme
of Don Quixote. The duke desired, if he f
and overcame him or not, to return that wa
quaint him of the event. The bachelor p

would: he departed in search of him; and, not finding him at Saragossa, he went forward, and there befel him what you have already heard. He came back to the duke's castle, and recounted the whole to him, with the conditions of the combat, and that Don Quixote was now actually returning to perform his word, like a true knight-arrant, and retire home to his village for a twelvemonth, in which time, perhaps, (quoth the bachelor) he may be cured of his madness. This, he said, was the motive of these his disguises, it being a great pity, that a gentleman of so good an understanding as Don Quixote should be mad. Then he took leave of the duke, and returned home, expecting there Don Quixote, who was coming after him.

Hence the duke took occasion to play him this trick, so great was the pleasure he took in every thing relating to Don Quixote and Sancho: and, sending a great many of his servants, on horseback and on foot, to beset all the roads about the castle, every way by which Don Quixote might possibly return, he ordered them, if they met with him, to bring him, with or without his good-will to the castle. They met with him, and gave notice of it to the duke, who, having already given orders for what was to be done, as soon as he heard of his arrival, commanded the torches, and other illuminations, to be lighted up in the court-yard, and Altisidora to to be placed upon the tomb, with all the preparations before related; the whole represented so to the life, that there was but little difference between that and truth. And Cid Hamete says besides, that, to his thinking, the mockers were as mad as the mocked; and that the duke and duchess were within two fingers breadth of appearing to be mad themselves, since they took so much pains to make a jest of two fools: one of whom was sleeping at full swing, and the other waking with his disjointed thoughts; in which state the day found them, and the desire to get up; for Don Quixote, whether conquered, or conqueror, never took pleasure in the downy bed of sloth.

Altisidora (in Don Quixote's opinion, just returning from death to life) carrying on the humour of the duke and duchess, crowned with the same garland she wore on the tomb, and clad in a robe of white taffeta, flowered with gold, and her hair dishevelled, and leaning

on a black staff of polished ebony, entered the chamber of Don Quixote, who was so amazed and confounded at the sight of her, that he shrunk down, and covered himself almost over head and ears with the sheets and quilts, his tongue mute, and with no inclination to shew her any kind of civility. Altisidora sat down in a chair by his bed's head, and, after fetching a profound sigh, with a tender and enfeebled voice, she said:—When women of distinction, and reserved maidens, trample upon honour, and give a loose to the tongue, breaking through every inconveniency, and giving public notice of the secrets of their heart, they must sure be reduced to a great strait. I, signor Don Quixote de la Mancha, am one of these distressed, vanquished, and enamoured, but, for all that, patient, long-suffering, and modest to such a degree, that my soul burst through my silence, and I lost my life. It is now two days, since, by reflection on your rigour, O flinty knight, and harder than any marble to my complaints, I have been dead, or at least judged to be so by those that saw me; and were it not that love, taking pity on me, placed my recovery in the sufferings of this good squire, there had I remained in the other world. Love, quoth Sancho, might as well have placed it in those of my ass, and I should have taken it as kindly. But, pray tell me, signora, so may heaven provide you with a more tender-hearted lover than my master, what is it you saw in the other world? what is there in hell? for whoever dies in despair must perforce take up his rest in that place. In truth, quoth Altisidora, I did not die quite, since I went not to hell; for had I once set foot in it I could not have got out again, though I had never so great a desire. The truth is, I came to the gate, where about a dozen devils were playing at tennis, in their waistcoats and drawers, their shirt collars ornamented with Flanders lace, and ruffles of the same, with four inches of their wrists bare, to make their hands seem the longer,* in which they held rackets of fire. But what I wondered most at was, that, instead of tennis-balls, they made use of books, seemingly stuffed

* It was so strange and impudent a sight for women *or men to shew* their naked wrists or arms, that the *author puts the* devils in that fashion.

with wind and flocks; a thing marvellous and r
but this I did not so much wonder at, as to see,
whereas it is natural for winning gamesters to rej
and losers to be sorry, among the gamesters of that p
all grumbled, all were upon the fret, and all cursed
another. That is not at all strange, answered San
for devils play or not play, win or not win, can n
be contented That is true, quoth Altisidora:
there is another thing I wonder at (I mean, I wo
ed at it then) which was, that, at the first toss the
was demolished, and could not serve a second t
and so they whipped them away, new and old, th
was marvellous to behold: and to one of them, fla
new, and neatly bound, they gave such a smart str
that they made its guts fly out, and scattered its le
all about; and one devil said to another: See
book that is; and the other devil answered: It is,
second part of the history of Don Quixote de la
cha, not composed by Cid Hamete, its first author
by an Arragonese, who calls himself a native of T
sillas. Away with it, quoth the other devil, and c
with it to the bottom of the infernal abyss, tha
eyes may never see it more. Is it so bad? answere
other. So bad, replied the first, that, had I mysel
dertaken to make it worse, it had been past my
They went on with their play, tossing other bool
and down; and I, for having heard Don Quixote
ed, whom I so passionately love, endeavoured to re
this vision in my memory. A vision, doubtless, it
be, quoth Don Quixote; for there is no other I-
world, and this history is tossed about from har
hand, but stays in none; for every body has a kick
It gives me no concern to hear that I wander, li
phantom, about the shades of the abyss, or about
light of this earth, because I am not the person thi
tory treats of. If it be good, faithful, and true, it
survive for ages; but if it be bad, from its birth t
grave the passage will be but short.

Altisidora was going on with her complaining
Don Quixote, when Don Quixote said to her: I
often told you, madam, that I am very sorry you
placed your affections on me: since from my
must expect no other return but thanks. I
to be Dulcinea del Toboso's, and to her the

there be any, have devoted me; and to thin
other beauty shall occupy the place she p
my soul, is to think what is impossible.
suffice to disabuse you, and prevail with you
within the bounds of your own modesty, sinc
ture is tied to the performance of impo
Which Altisidora hearing, she assumed an a
and fury, and said: God's my life! Don p
soul of a mortar, stone of a date, and more
and obstinate than a courted clown, if I co
I will tear your very eyes out. Think you,
quished, and Don cudgelled, that I died for
that you have seen this night has been but
for I am not a woman to let the black of my
for such camels, much less die for them. T
ly believe, quoth Sancho; for the business o
love is a jest: folks may talk of it; but, for d
lieve it Judas.

While they were engaged in this discou
entered the musicain, singer, and poet, who
the two forementioned stanzas: who, mak
found reverence to Don Quixote, said: Be pl
knight, to reckon and look upon me in the
your most humble servants; for I have been
tionately so this great while, as well on a
your fame, as of your exploits. Don Quixote
Pray, sir, tell me who you are, that my ci
correspond with your merits. The young ma
ed, that he was the musician and panegyr
foregoing night. Indeed, replied Don Qui
have an excellent voice: but what you su
seem to me much to the purpose; for wha
stanzas of Garcilasso to do with the death of
tlewoman? Wonder not at that, sir, ans
musician; for, among the upstart poets of ou
the fashion for every one to write as he pleas
steal from whom he pleases, be it to the
not; and, in these times, there is no silly t
or written, but it is ascribed to poetical licer

Don Quixote would have replied: but the
duchess, coming to visit him, prevented him
tween them there passed a long and delicious

* "Bacallao;" the fish so called.

in which Sancho said so many pleasant and wag-
hings, that their grandeurs admired afresh as well
simplicity, as his acuteness. Don Quixote be-
ed them to grant him leave to depart that very
or it was more becoming such vanquished knights
to dwell in a hog-stye, than a royal palace. They
y granted his request, and the duchess asked him,
her Altisidora remained in his good graces. He
ered: Your ladyship must know, dear madam,
the whole of this damsel's distemper proceeds
idleness, the remedy whereof consists in some
it and constant employment. And she has told
ere, that lace is much worn in hell, and, since she
needs know how to make it, let her stick to that;
while her fingers are employed in managing the
ns, the image or images of what she loves will not
ving so much in her imagination. This is the
, this is my opinion, and this my advice. And
too, added Sancho; for I never in my life saw a
r of lace that died for love; for your damsels that
usied have their thoughts more intent upon per-
ng their tasks, than upon their loves. I know it
self; for, while I am digging, I never think of my
e; I mean my Teresa Panza, whom I love better
my very eye-lids. You say very well, Sancho,
the duchess, and I will take care, that my Altisi-
shall henceforward be employed in needle-work,
ich she is very expert. There is no need, madam,
ered Altisidora, of this remedy, since the consid-
on of the cruel treatment I have received from
uffian and monster, will blot him out of my mem-
without any other expedient; and with your grand-
leave, I will withdraw, that I may not have before
yes, I will not say, his sorrowful figure, but his
inable and hideous aspect. I wish, quoth the
this may not prove like the saying, A lover rail-
is not far from forgiving. Altisidora, making
of wiping the tears from her eyes with a hand-
ief, and then making a low courtesy to her lord
ady, went out of the room. Poor damsel! quoth
bo, I forbode thee ill luck, since thou hast to do
a *heart of* matweed, and a soul of oak; for, if
f thou hadst had to do with me, another gui
would have crowed. The conversation was

an end. Don Quixote dres
duke and duchess, and dep

CHAP

Of what befel Don Quixo
in the way to

THE vanquished and forlo
along, exceedingly pensive o
joyful on the other. His de
and his joy was occasioned
disenchantment of Dulcinea
by the virtue inherent in Sanc
given a manifest proof in the
ra; though he could not readi
lieve, that the enamoured dams
cho went on, not at all please
had not been as good as her
smocks: and, revolving in
master: In truth, sir, I am the
sician that is to be met with
there are doctors, who kill the
cure, and yet are paid for their
than signing a little scroll of ce
the apothecary, not the doctor,
I, though another's cure costs m
es, pinches, pin-prickings, and
But I vow to God, if ever any
hands again, they shall grease
form the cure; for, The abbot
his meat, and I cannot believe
with the virtue I have, that I
to others for nothing. You a
Sancho, answered Don Quixo
done very ill by you, not to
smocks; though the virtue you
tis, and without any studying
studying how to receive a lit
For myself, I can say, if you
for the disenchanting Dulcinea
good to you ere now: but I do
ment will agree with the condi

ould by no means have the reward hinder the opera ion of the medicine. But, for all that, I think, there an be no risk in making a small trial. Consider, Sanho, what you would demand, and set about the whiping straight, and pay yourself in ready money, since ou have cash of mine in your hands.

At these offers Sancho opened his eyes and ears a pan wider, and in his heart consented to whip himself eartily, and he said to his master: Well then, sir, I vill now dispose myself to give your worship satisfacion, since I shall get something by it; for, I confess, he love I have for my wife and children makes me eem a little self-interested. Tell me, sir, how much vill your worship give for each lash? Were I to pay ou, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, in proportion to he greatness and quality of the cure, the treasures of Venice, and the mines of Potosi, would be too small a recompence. But see how much cash you have of nine, and set your own price upon each lash. The ashes, answered Sancho, are three thousand three hunlred, and odd: of these I have already given myself five; the rest remain; let the five pass for the odd ones and let us come to the three thousand three hundred, which, at a quarter of a real a piece* (for I will not take less, though all the world should command me to do it) amount to three thousand three hundred quarter-reals; which make one thousand six hundred and fifty half-reals; which make eight hundred and twenty-five reals. These I will deduct from from what I have of your worship's in my hands, and shall return to my house rich and contented, though well whipped: for, They do not take trouts†—I say no more. O blessed Sancho! O amiable Sancho! replied Don Quixote; how much shall Dulcinea and I be bound to serve you all the days of life heaven shall be pleased to grant us! If she recovers her lost state, as it is impossible but she must, her mishap will prove her good fortune, and my defeat a most happy triumph: and when, Sancho, do you propose to begin the discipline? I will add a

* Three halfpence.

† The proverb entire is, "No se toman truchas a bragas enxutas;" *i. e.* they do not take trouts with *dry breeches.*

hundred reals over and above for dispatch.
replied Sancho; even this very night with
take you care, sir, that we may be in op
and I will take care to lay my flesh open.

At length came the night, expected by Don
with the greatest anxiety in the world, the v
Apollo's chariot seeming to him to be broken,
day to be prolonged beyond its usual length;
it happens to lovers, who, in the account of
patience, think the hour of the accomplishmen
desires will never come.*

Finally, they got among some pleasant tree
way out of the high-road, where, leaving t
and pannel of Rosinante and Dapple vacant,
themselves along on the green grass, and su
of Sancho's cupboard; who, making a pande
flexible whip of Dapple's head-stall, and halte
drew about twenty paces from his master am
beech-trees. Don Quixote, seeing him go v
resolution and spirit, said to him: Take care
you do not lash yourself to pieces: take time
stroke stay till another's over: hurry not yo
as to lose your breath in the midst of your c
mean, you must not lay it on so unmercifully a
your life before you attain to the desired num
that you may not lose the game by a card too
too little, I will stand aloof, and keep reckon
my beads the lashes you shall give yourself; a
en favour you as your worthy intention deser
good paymaster is in pain for no pawn, answe
cho: I design to lay it on in such a manner, th
smart without killing me; for in this the subs
the miracle must needs consist. He then strip
self naked from the waist upward: and then, s
and cracking the whip, he began to lay himself
Don Quixote to count the strokes. Sancho h
himself about six or eight, when he thought t
little too heavy, and the price much too easy; c
ping his hand a while, he said to his master,
appealed on being deceived, every lash of the
richly worth half a real, instead of a quarter. I
friend Sancho, and be not faint-hearted, qu

* *Ut nox longa quibus mentitur amica,* &c.

e; for I double the pay. If so, quoth Sancho, with it in God's name, and let it rain lashes. e sly knave, instead of laying them on his back, em on the trees, fetching ever and anon such that one would have thought each would have his very soul by the roots. Don Quixote, natu- nder-hearted, and fearing he would put an end life, and so he should not attain his desire Sancho's imprudence, said to him: I conjure your life, friend, let the business rest here; for dicine seems to me very harsh; and it will not ss to give time to time; for Zamora was not ta- one hour. You have already given yourself, if n right, above a thousand lashes, enough for sent; for the ass (to speak in homely phrase) rry the load, but not a double load. No, no, an- Sancho, it shall never be said for me, The mon , the work delayed: pray, sir, get a little far- , and let me give myself another thousand lash- east; for a couple more of such bouts will finish , and stuff to spare. Since you find yourself ood a disposition, quoth Don Quixote, heaven as- ; and stick to it, for I am gone. Sancho re- to his task with so much fervour, and such was our with which he gave the lashes, that he had disbarked many a tree: and once, lifting up ice, and giving an unmeasurable stroke to a he cried: Down with thee, Sampson, and all e with thee. Don Quixote presently ran to the of the piteous voice, and the stroke of the se- whip, and, laying hold of the twisted halter, served Sancho instead of a bull's-pizzle, he said: n forbid, friend Sancho, that, for my pleasure, ould lose that life, upon which depends the nance of your wife and children: let Dulcinea better opportunity; for I will contain myself the bounds of the nearest hope,* and stay till cover fresh strength, that this business may be ided to the satisfaction of all parties. Since worship, dear sir, will have it so, answered San- be it, in God's name, and pray, fling your cloak

phrase borrowed from the potentia proxima c ols, which immediately precedes the act.

over my shoulders; for I am all in a sweat an
to catch cold, as new disciplinants are apt to
Quixote did so; and, leaving himself in his
he covered up Sancho, who slept till the su
him, and then they pursued their journey
stopped at a place about three leagues off.

They alighted at an inn; for Don Quixo
for such, and not for a castle, moated round
turrets, portcullises, and draw-bridge; for,
defeat, he discoursed with more judgment on
sions, as will presently appear. He was lo
ground room, hung with painted serge, instea
estry, as is the fashion of country towns.
the pieces was painted, by a wretched hand,
of Helen, when the daring guest carried her
Menelaus. In another, was the history of
Æneas; she upon a high tower, as making
with half a bed sheet to her fugitive guest,
out at sea, flying away from her, in a frigate
tine. He observed in the two history-pieces,
en went away with no very ill will; for she
laughing to herself: but the beauteous Dido s
let fall from her eyes tears as big as walnuts.
Don Quixote seeing, he said: These two la
most unfortunate in not being born in this a
above all men unhappy, that I was not born i
for had I encountered those gallants, neither
been burnt nor Carthage destroyed; since, b
ling Paris only, all these mischiefs had been
ed. I hold a wager, quoth Sancho, that, e
long, there will not be either victualling-house
inn, or barber's shop, in which the history of
ploits will not be painted, but I could wish t
be done by the hand of a better painter than
did these. You are in the right, Sancho, qu
Quixote; for this painter is like Orbaneja, of
who, when he was asked what he was draw
swered; As it shall happen: and if it chance
cock, he wrote under it, This is a cock, les
should take it for a fox. Just such an one, m
Sancho, the painter or writer (for it is all on
he, who wrote the history of this new Don
lately published: he painted or wrote, whate
uppermost. Or he is like a poet, some years

court, called Mauleon, who answered all q
tempore; and, a person asking him the mea
um de Deo, he answered, De donde diere.*
ting all this aside, tell me, Sancho, do y
giving yourself the other brush to-night? an
a mind it should be under a roof, or in the
Before God, sir, answered Sancho, for wha
to give myself, it is all the same to me, whe
in a house, or in a field: though I had rathe
among trees; for methinks, they accompany
were, and help me to bear my toil marvelou
However, it shall not be now, friend Sancho,
ed Don Quixote: but, that you may recover s
it shall be reserved for our village; and we sl
thither by the day after to-morrow at farthest.
cho replied, he might order that as he pleased
for his part he was desirous to make an end
business out of hand, and in hot blood, and wh
mill was grinding: for usually the danger lies i
delay; and, Pray to God devoutly, and hamme
stoutly; and, One take is worth two I'll give th
and, A bird in hand is better than a vulture on the
No more proverbs, Sancho, for God's sake, q
Don Quixote; for, methinks, you are going bac
licut erat. Speak plainly, and without flourishes,
ave often told you, and you will find it a loaf per c
your way. I know not how I came to be so unlu
swered Sancho, that I cannot give a reason wit
proverb, nor a proverb, which does not seem to
be a reason; but I will mend if I can: and
led the conversation for that time.

CHAP. XX.

Don Quixote and Sancho arrived at their lage.

N QUIXOTE and Sancho staid all the day in
e, at the inn, waiting for night; the one to fi
k of whipping in the fields, and the other
cess of it, in which consisted the accom

Wherever it hits." No affinity, but
but small.

your name; ...
more than I can well ex...
Tarfe, answered the new guest.
replied: Then, I presume, your
varo Tarfe, mentioned in the sec-
y of Don Quixote de la Mancha,
blished by a certain modern author.
ered the gentleman, and that Don
the said history, was a very great
I was the person, who drew him
e: at least I prevailed upon him to
n justs and tournaments held at Sar-
was going myself: and, in truth, I
any kindnesses, and saved his back
troked by the hangman for being too
me, signor Don Alvaro, quoth Don
ny thing like that Don Quixote you
truth, answered the guest, not in the
s Don Quixote, said ours, had he a
called Sancho Panza? Yes, he had,
Alvaro; and though he had the reputa-

good Don
too with
I durst h
Nuncio

* Th
in whi
that g
in a t
ing o
jests
the
has
as
ch
th

tion of being very pleasant, I never heard him say one thing that had any pleasantry in it. I verily lieve it, quoth Sancho, straight; for it is not ev body's talent to say pleasant things; and this Sanc your worship speaks of, signor gentleman, must some very great rascal, ideot, and knave into the l gain! for the true Sancho Panza am I, who have m witty conceits than there are drops in a shower.* but the experiment, sir, and follow me but one y and you will find that they drop from me at every s and are so many, and so pleasant, that, for the m part, without knowing what I say, I make every b laugh that hears me: and the true Don Quixote d Mancha, the renowned, the valiant, the discreet, enamoured, the undoer of injuries, the defender of pils and orphans, the protector of widows, the mur er of damsels, he who has the peerless Dulcinea Toboso for his sole mistress, is this gentleman h present, my master: any other Don Quixote whate and any other Sancho Panza, is all mockery an mere dream. Before God, I believe it, answered Alvaro: for you have said more pleasant things, fri in four words you have spoken, than that other S cho Panza in all I ever heard him say, though that a great deal: for he was more gluttonous than w spoken, and more stupid than pleasant: and I tak for granted, that the enchanters, who persecute good Don Quixote, have had a mind to persecute too with the bad one: but I know not what to say; I durst have sworn I had left him under cure in Nuncio of Toledo's house, and now here starts up an

* The original is, "tengo mas gracias que llovid in which there is some ambiguity. The sense give that generally received. But perhaps Sancho here in a thousand other places, plays on the double me ing of the word "gracias," which signifies, not c jests or pleasantries, but also gifts or favours; and t the rendering will be, "I have more jests than hea has showered down favours upon me." The author t as *great* pleasure in double meanings, as he makes *cho take*, and, I fancy, in proverbs too: for it w *though* Don Quixote is his hero, Sancho is his *ite*.

er Don Quixote, very different from mine. I know not, quoth Don Quixote, whether I am the good one; but I can say I am not the bad one; and as a proof of what I say, you must know, dear signor Alvaro Tarfe, that I never was in Saragossa in all the days of my life: on the contrary, having been told that this imaginary Don Quixote was at the tournaments of that city, I resolved not to go thither, that I might make him a liar in the face of all the world; and so I went directly to Barcelona, that register of courtesy, asylum of strangers, hospital of the poor, native country of the valiant, avenger of the injured, agreeable seat of firm friendship, and, for situation and beauty, singular. And, though what befel me there be not very much to my satisfaction, but on the contrary, much to my sorrow, the having seen that city enables me the better to bear it. In a word, signor Don Alvaro Tarfe, I am Don Quixote de la Mancha, the same that fame speaks of, and not that unhappy wretch, who would usurp my name, and arrogate to himself the honour of my exploits. And therefore I conjure you, sir, as you are a gentleman, to make a declaration before the magistrate of this town, that you never saw me before in your life, and that I am not the Don Quixote printed in the second part, nor this Sancho Panza my squire him you knew. That I will, with all my heart, answered Don Alvaro; though it surprises me to see two Don Quixotes, and two Sanchos, at the same time, as different in their actions, as alike in their names. And, I say again, I am now assured, that I have not seen what I have seen, nor in respect to me, has that happened which has happened. Without doubt, quoth Sancho, your worship must be enchanted, like my lady Dulcinea del Toboso: and would to heaven your disenchantment depended upon my giving myself another three thousand and odd lashes, as I do for her; for I would lay them on, without interest or reward. I understand not this business of lashes, quoth Don Alvaro. Sancho answered, it was too long to tell at present, but he would give him an account, if they happened to travel the same road.

Dinner time was now come: Don Quixote and Don *Alvaro dined* together. By chance the magistrate of *the town* came into the inn, with a notary; and Don

ote desired of him, that Don Alvaro Tarfe, the
man there present, might depose before his wor-
that he did not know Don Quixote de la Mancha,
present also, and that he was not the man hand-
out in a printed history, entitled, "The second
of Don Quixote de la Mancha, written by such a
e Avellaneda, a native of Tordesillas." In short,
agistrate proceeded according to form: the de-
on was worded as strong as could be in such ca-
at which Don Quixote and Sancho were overjoy-
s if this attestation had been of the greatest im-
nce to them, and as if the difference between the
Don Quixote's, and the two Sanchos, were not
nt enough from their words and actions. Many
liments and offers of service passed between Don
ro and Don Quixote, in which the great Manche-
hewed his discretion in such manner, that he con-
d Don Alvaro Tarfe of the error he was in; who
persuaded he must needs be enchanted, since he
ouched with his hand two such contrary Quixotes.
e evening came: they departed from that place,
at the distance of about half a league, the road
d into two: one led to Don Quixote's village, and
ther to where Don Alvaro was going. In this little
Don Quixote related to him the misfortune of his
t, and the enchantment and cure of Dulcinea;
h was new cause of admiration to Don Alvaro,
embracing Don Quixote and Sancho, went on his
and Don Quixote his.

at night he passed among some other trees, to
Sancho an opportunity of finishing his discipline,
h he did after the same manner as he had done
ight before, more at the expense of the bark of the
es, than of his back, of which he was so careful,
the lashes he gave it would not have brushed off
that had been upon it. The deceived Don Quix-
as very punctual in telling the strokes, and found,
including those of the foregoing night, they
nted to three thousand and twenty-nine. One
d have thought the sun himself had risen earlier
usual to behold the sacrifice: by whose light they
ued their journey, discoursing together of Don
o's mistake, and how prudently they had contriv-
procure his deposition before a magistrate, in
uthentic a form.

That day, and that night, they travelled wi
occurrence worth relating, unless it be, th
finished his task that night: at which Do
was above measure pleased, and waited for t
see if he could light on his lady, the disench
cinea, in his way: and continuing his journe
ed narrowly at every woman he met, to see i
Dulcinea del Toboso, holding it for infallible,
lin's promises could not lie. With these th
desires, they ascended a little hill, from whenc
covered their village; which, as soon as Sanc
he kneeled down and said: Open thine eyes,
country, and behold thy son Sancho Panza
to thee again, if not very rich, yet very w
ped: open thine arms, and receive likewi
Don Quixote, who, if he comes conquered
er's hand, yet he comes a conqueror o
which, as I have heard him say, is the greate
that can be desired. Money I have; for if I
well whipped, I am come off like a gentlema
those fooleries, Sancho, quoth Don Quixote,
go directly home to our village, where we wi
scope to our imaginations, and settle the pl
tend to govern ourselves by, in our pastoral l
said, they descended the hill, and went direc
village.

CHAP. XXI.

*Of the omens Don Quixote met with at the
into his village, with other accidents wh
and illustrate this great history.*

At the entrance into the village, as Cid H
ports, Don Quixote saw a couple of boys quar
a thrashing-floor, and one said to the other
not yourself, Periquillo; for you shall nev
more while you live. Don Quixote, hearing
to Sancho: Do you not take notice, friend,
boy has said, You shall never see it more
live? Well, answered Sancho, what signifie
boy did say so? What, replied Don Quixote, d
perceive, that applying these words to my pr

meaning is, I shall never see Dulcinea more? Sancho would have answered, but was prevented by seeing a hare come running across the field, pursued by abundance of dogs and sportsmen; which, frighted, came for shelter, and squatted between Dapple's feet. Sancho took her up alive, and presented her to Don Quixote, who cried, Malum signum, malum signum:* A hare flies; dogs pursue her; Dulcinea appears not. Your worship is a strange man, quoth Sancho: let us suppose now, that this hare is Dulcinea del Toboso, and these dogs, that pursue her, those wicked enchanters who transformed her into a country wench: she flies, I catch her, and put her into your worship's hands, who have her in your arms, and make much of her: what bad sign is this, or what ill omen can you draw from hence? The two contending boys came up to look at the hare, and Sancho asked one of them, what they were quarrelling about? And answer was made him, by him who had said, You shall never see it more while you live; that he had taken a cage full of crickets from the other boy, which he never intended to restore to him while he lived. Sancho drew four quarter-maravedis† out of his pocket, and gave it the boy for his cage, which he put into Don Quixote's hands, and said: Behold, sir, all your omens broken, and come to nothing; and they have no more to do with our adventures, in my judgment, a dunce as I am, than last year's clouds; and, if, I remember right, I have heard the priest of our village say, that good christians, and wise people, ought not to regard these fooleries: and your worship's own self told me as much a few days ago, giving me to understand, that all such christians, as minded presages, were fools; so there is no need of troubling ourselves any further about them, but let us go on, and get home to our village.

The hunters came up, and demanded their hare, and Don Quixote gave it them. They went on their way, and, at the entrance of their village, in a little meadow, they found the priest, and the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, repeating their breviary. Now you must know, that Sancho Panza had thrown the buckram

* *A bad sign*, a bad sign. † Twopence.

robe, painted with flames of fire (which he h
at the duke's castle, the night he brought Alti
life again) instead of a sumpter-cloth, over th
of armour, upon his ass. He had likewise cla
mitre on Dapple's head; insomuch that neve
so metamorphosed and adorned. The priest
bachelor presently knew them both, and ca
ning to them with open arms. Don Quixote
and embraced them closely; and the boys,
sharp-sighted as lynxes, espying the ass's mitr
ed to view him, and said one to another: Con
and you shall see Sancho Panza's ass finer th
go,* and Don Quixote's beast leaner than ever
ly, surrounded with boys, and accompanied
priest and the bachelor, they enterad the vill
took the way to Don Quixote's house, wh
found at the door the housekeeper and the nie
had already heard the news of his arrival. It
wise reached the ears of Teresa Panza, Sanch
who, half naked, with her hair about her e
dragging Sanchica after her, ran to see her l
and seeing him not so well equipped as she im
governor ought to be, she said: What makes y
thus, dear husband? methinks, you come a
foundered, and look more like a misgovernec
than a governor. Peace, Teresa, answered
for, There is not always bacon where there ar
hang it on; and let us go to our house, wl
shall hear wonders. Money I bring with m
is the main business) got by my own industry, a
out damage to any body. Bring but money,
husband, quoth Teresa, and let it be got thi
that way: for get it how you will, you w
brought up no new custom in the world. S
embraced her father, and asked if he had bro
any thing; for she had been wishing for him a
do for rain in May: and, she taking hold of
on one side, and his wife taking him by the
the other, Sanchica pulling Dapple after h
went home to their house, leaving Don Quixot
in the power of his niece and the housekeepe
the company of the priest and the bachelor.

---

* *A scurvy long*-winded poet of Spain, th
contemporary, and probably a beaux of those

Quixote, without standing upon times or sea-
that very instant went apart, with the bache-
e priest, and related to them, in few words,
as vanquished, and the obligation he lay un-
stir from his village in a year; which he in-
inctually to observe, without transgressing a
became a true knight-errant, obliged by the
cepts of chivalry. He also told them, how he
ved to turn shepherd for that year, and to pass
in the solitude of the fields, where he might
reigns to his amorous thoughts, exercising
that pastoral and virtuous employment; be-
them, if they had leisure, and were not en-
business of greater consequence, to bear him
; telling them, he would purchase sheep and
fficient to give them the name of shepherds;
ng them also, that the principal part of the
was already done, he having chosen for them
fit as if they had been cast in a mould. The
ired him to repeat them. Don Quixote an-
hat he himself was to be called the shepherd
; the bachelor the shepherd Carrascon; the
e shepherd Curiambro, and Sancho, Panza,
herd Panzino. They were astonished at this
ness of Don Quixote: but to prevent his ram-
e more from his village, and resuming his
s, and in hopes he might be cured in that year,
in with his new project, and applauded his
high piece of discretion, offering to be his
ns in that exercise. Besides, said Sampson
, I, as every body knows, am an excellent po-
all be composing, at every turn, pastoral or
erses, or such as shall be most for my purpose,
and divert us as we range the fields. But,
n, the first and chief thing necessary, is, that
s choose the name of the shepherdess he in-
celebrate in his verses, and we will not leave
it never so hard, in whose bark we will not
and grave her name, as is the fashion and cus-
amoured shepherds. That is very right, an-
Don Quixote; though I need not trouble my-
ok for a feigned name, having the peerless
del Toboso, the glory of these banks, the o
f these meads, the support of beauty, t

cream of good-humour, and lastly, the worth
of all praise, be it never so hyperbolical. Th
said the priest; but, as for us, we must lo
shepherdesses of an inferior stamp, who, if t
square, may corner with us.* To which San
rasco added: And, when we are at a loss, w
them the names we find in print, of which
is full, as Phillises, Armarillises, Dianas,
Galateas, Belisardas: for, since they are
market, we may lawfully buy, and make u
as our own. If my mistress, or, to speak m
ly, my shepherdess, is called Anna, I will ce
under the name of Anarda, and, if Frances,
her Francesina, and, if Lucy, Lucinda; an
rest. And Sancho Panza, if he is to be
brotherhood, may celebrate his wife Teresa
the name of Teresaina. Don Quixote smi
application of the names, and the priest high
ed his virtuous and honourable resolution,
offered to bear him company all the time he
from attending the duties of his function.
they took their leave of him, desiring and
him to take care of his health, and make m
self with good heartening things.

Now fortune would have it, that his niece
keeper overheard their conversation; and
the two were gone, they both came in to Do
and the niece said: What is the meaning o
ole? Now that we thought your worship wa
with a resolution to stay at home, and live
decent life, you have a mind to involve
new labyrinths, by turning shepherd.* In
straw is too hard to make pipes of. To
housekeeper added: And can your worship b
fields, the summer's sultry heat, the winter'
cold, and the howling of the wolves? No,
for this is the business of robust fellows, t
bred to such employment, as it were, from

* That is, "if they serve not to all pur
to some," The phrase is borrowed from ar

* Literally, "making yourself, Little she
comes, Little shepherd that goes;" an allu
pose, to some pastorals then well known.

d swaddling-clothes. And, of the two evils, it
r to be a knight-errant than a shepherd. Look,
take my advice, which is not given by one full
and wine, but fasting, and with fifty years over
d: stay at home, look after your estate, go often
ession, and relieve the poor; and if any ill
f it, let it lie at my door. Peace, daughters,
d Don Quixote; for I know perfectly what I
do. Lead me to bed: for, methinks, I am not
ll; and assure yourselves, that, whether I am
t-errant, or a wandering shepherd, I will not
rovide for you, as you shall find by experience.
o good women (for doubtless such they were)
sekeeper and niece, carried him to bed, where
ve him to eat, and made as much of him as pos-

CHAP. XXII.

on Quixote fell sick, made his will, and died.

l human things, especially the lives of men, are
ry, incessantly declining from their beginning
y arrive at their final period; and as that of
ixote had no peculiar privilege from heaven to
it from the common fate, his end and dissolu-
me when he least thought of it. For, whether
eded from the melancholy occasioned by finding
vanquished, or from the disposition of heaven
eeing it, he was seized with a fever, which
d him six days to his bed, in which time he was
tly visited by the priest, the bachelor, and the
his friends: his trusty squire Sancho Panza
irring from his bed-side. They, supposing that
f at being vanquished, and the disappointment
ishes as to the restoration and disenchantment
inea, had reduced him to this state, endeavour-
ll imaginable ways to revive his spirits. The
r bid him be of good courage, and rise from bed,
upon his pastoral exercise; he having already
d an eclogue to that purpose, not inferior to
sten by Sannazarius; telling him besides, the
already bought with his own money, of

herdsman of Qui
the flock, the one
ron. But, for all t
tinued. His friend
pulse, and did not
would, it would no
soul's health, that c
Quixote heard it wit
did his housekeeper,
began to weep most
dead, and laid out be
tor's opinion, that me
brought him to his e
would leave him, for h
They did so, and he s
is) above six hours, inso
the niece thought that
But awake he did at th
loud voice, said: Blessed
vouchsafed me so great a
have no bounds, and the s
nor obstruct them. The
her uncle's words, and s
sense in them than usual,
and she said to him: What
thing extraordinary happene
sins do you speak of? Niec
the mercies I mean are tho
notwithstanding my sins, to
stant. My judgment is now
those dark clouds of ignoranc
and continual reading of those
alry had obscured it. Now I
and delusion of them, and am
ceived so late, that I have no t
amends, by reading others that
en my soul. I feel myself, niece
and I would fain so order it, as
tation of madness upon my memo
confess I have been a madman, I
truth of it at my death. Dear c
good friends, the priest, the bache
co, and master Nicholas the barbe
my confession and my will. But
ed the niece by the coming of all

cely had Don Quixote set his eyes on them, he cried out: Give me joy, good gentlemen, ım now no longer Don Quixote de la Mancha, ınzo Quixano, for his virtues surnamed the Good. ıow an utter enemy to Amadis de Gaul, and the ırable rabble of his descendants: now all the ɜs of knight-errantry are to me odious and pro- I am now sensible of my folly, and of the danger led into by reading them; and now, through the of God, and my own dear-bought experience, I and abhor them. When his three friends heard ɜeak thus, they believed for certain that some ırenzy had possessed him; and Sampson said to What! signor Don Quixote, now that we have of the lady Dulcinea's being disenchanted, talk at this rate; and, now that we are just up- point of becoming shepherds, to lead our lives ;, and like any princes would you turn hermit? I conjure you, replied Don Quixote, recollect if, and leave idle stories; those, which have hith ıne me so much real hurt, my repentance, by the ıce of heaven, shall convert to my good. I feel, nen, the quick approach of death: let us be seri- d bring me a confessor, and a notary to draw my or in such circumstances as these, a man must ot trifle with his soul: and, therefore, I beseech hile my friend the priest is taking my confession notary be fetched. They stared at one another, ring at Don Quixote's expressions, and, though some doubt, they resolved to believe him: and the signs by which they conjectured he was was, his passing by so easy and sudden a ion, from mad to sober. To the words he had spoken he added others, so proper, so ration- l so christian, that their doubt was quite remov- l they verily believed him in his perfect senses. iest made every body leave the room, and staid ıim alone, and confessed him. The bachelor or the notary, and presently returned with him, th Sancho Panza, who having learned from the or in what condition his master was, besides the housekeeper and the niece in tears, began ter up his face and to fall a blubbering. The con- ended, the priest came out of the room, saying:

Good Alonzo Quixano is just expiring, and certai
his right mind: let us all go in that he may ma
will. This news opened the sluices of the sw
eyes of the housekeeper, the niece, and Sancho
his trusty squire, in such wise that it forced a to
of tears from their eyes, and a thousand groans
their breasts: for, in truth, as has been said b
both while he was plain Alonzo Quixano, and
he was Don Quixote de la Mancha, he was ever
amiable disposition and affable behaviour, and
therefore beloved, not only by those of his own fa
but by all that knew him.

The notary now entered the room with the o
and the preamble of the will being made, and
Quixote having disposed of his soul with all the
tian circumstances required, coming to the leg
he said: Item, it is my will, in respect to certain
eys, which Sancho Panza (whom, in my madn
made my squire) has in his hands, there being bet
him and me some reckonings, receipts, and dis
ments, he shall not be charged with them, nor
to any account for them; but if, after he has
himself, there be any overplus, which will be bu
little, it shall be his own, and much good may
him: and if, as, during my madness, I was the
sion of procuring for him the government of an is
I could, now that I am in my senses, procure hin
of a kingdom, I would readily do it; for the sinc
of his heart, and the fidelity of his dealings, deser
and, turning to Sancho, he said: Forgive me, fr
for making you a madman, by persuading you t
lieve, as I did myself, that there have been forn
and are now knights-errant in the world. Alas
swered Sancho, sobbing, dear sir, do not die; but
my counsel, and live many years; for the gre
madness a man can commit in this life, is to suffer
self to die, without any body's killing him, or
brought to his end by any other hand than th
melancholy. Be not lazy, sir, but get out of bed
let us be going to the field, dressed like shepherd
we agreed to do; and who knows, but behind
bush or other we may find the lady Dulcinea d
chanted as fine as heart can wish? If you di
grief of being vanquished, lay the blame upon m

a were unhorsed by my not having girted Rosi-
s saddle as it ought to have been: besides, your
p must have read in your books of chivalries,
is a common thing for one knight to unhorse
r, and him, who is vanquished to-day, to become
eror to-morrow. It is so, quoth Sampson, and
Sancho is very much in the right. Gentlemen,
Don Quixote, let us proceed fairly and softly:
not for this year's birds in last year's nests. I
ad; I am now sober: I was Don Quixote de la
a; I am now, as I have said, the good Alonzo
no: and may my unfeigned repentance, and my
ty, restore me to the esteem you once had for
nd let the notary proceed.

, I bequeath to Antonia Quixano, my niece here
t, all my estate real and personal, after the pay-
of all my debts and legacies: and the first to be
rged shall be, the wages due to my housekeeper
time she has been in my service, and twenty
besides for mourning. I appoint for my execu-
gnor the priest, and signor bachelor Sampson
co, here present. Item, it is my will, that, if
ia Quixano my niece is inclined to marry, it
e with a man, who, upon the strictest inquiry,
e found to know nothing of books of chival-
d, in case it shall appear he is acquainted with
and my niece notwithstanding will and does
him, she shall forfeit all I have bequeathed her
my executors may dispose of in pious uses, as
hink proper. Item, I beseech the said gentle-
ny executors, that, if good fortune should bring
acquainted with the author, who is said to have
a history handed about, and entitled, The sec-
rt of the exploits of Don Quixote de la Mancha,
ill in my name, most earnestly entreat him to
the occasion I have unwittingly given him of
so many and so great absurdities, as he there
ne: for I depart this life with a burden upon my
for having furnished him with a motive for
. With this the will was closed, and, a faint-
seizing him, he stretched himself out at full
in the bed. They were all alarmed, and ran to
stance; and in three days that he survived the
his will, he fainted away very often. T

house was all in confusion: however, the
the housekeeper drank, and Sancho Panza m
of himself: for this business of legacies efface
erates the grief that is naturally due to the de

In short, after receiving all the sacrament
pressing his abhorrence, in strong and pathet
sion, of all books of chivalry, Don Quixote's
came. The notary was present, and protest
never read in any book of chivalry, that
knight-errant had died in his bed in so com
christian a manner, as Don Quixote; who, a
plaints and tears of the by-standers, resigned h
—I mean, died. Which the priest seeing, h
the notary to draw up a certificate, that Alo
ano, commonly called Don Quixote de la Ma
departed this life, and died a natural death:
sisted upon this testimonial, lest any other a
sides Cid Hamete Ben Engeli, should raise
the dead, and write endless stories of his exp

This was the end of the ingenious gentle
Mancha, the place of whose birth Cid Ham
not expressly name, that all the towns and v
La Mancha might contend among themse
each adopt him for their own, as the sever
Greece contended for Homer.* We omit the
tions of Sancho, the niece, and the housekee
the new epitaphs upon his tomb, exceptin
Sampson Carrasco:—

Here lies the valiant cavalier,
Who never had a sense of fear:
So high his matchless courage rose,
He reckon'd Death among his vanquis

en, said: Here, O my slender quill, whether well
cut I know not, here, suspended by this brass
, shalt thou hang upon this spit-rack, and live ma-
ng ages, if presumptuous or wicked historians do
ake the down, to profane thee. But, before they
to touch thee, give them this warning in the best
ner thou canst. Beware, beware, ye plagiaries;
one of you touch me; for this undertaking (God
the king) was reserved for me alone.* For me
was Don Quixote born, and I for him: he knew
to act, and I how to write: we were destined for
other, maugre and in despite of that scribbling
ster of Tordesillas, who has dared, or shall dare,
his gross and ill-cut ostrich quill, to describe the
oits of my valorous knight; a burden too weighty
is shoulders, and an undertaking above his cold
rozen genius. And warn him, if perchance he falls
y way, to suffer the wearied and now mouldering
s of Don Quixote to repose in the grave: nor en-
our, in contradiction to all the ancient usages
customs of death, to carry him into Old Castile,
ng him rise out of the vault, in which he really
truly lies at full length, totally unable to attempt
rd expedition, or a new sally; for the two he has
dy made, with such success, and so much to the
ral satisfaction, as well of the people of these
doms of Spain, as of foreign countries, are suffi-
. to ridicule all that have been made by other
hts-errant. And thus shalt thou comply with the
of thy christian profession,* giving good advice to
who wish the ill; and I shall rest satisfied, and
d to have been the first who enjoyed entire the
s of his writings: for my only desire was to bring
public abhorrence the fabulous and absurd histo-
of knight-errantry, which by means of that of my
and genuine Don Quixote, begin already to totter,
will doubtless fall, never to rise again. Farewell.

These seem to be words borrowed from some old
nce.

his should be Cervantes' pen, and not the pre
l Moor's; or Cid Hamete speaks here, as
at the beginning of the tenth chapter of Book
part.

END OF VOL. IV.